# AMELIA.

BY

# HENRY FIELDING.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

EMBELLISHED WITH ENGRAVINGS.

VOL. III.

FELICES TER ET AMPLIUS,
QUOS IRRUPTA TENET COPULA.

Γυναικὸς ἐδὲν χρῆμ' ἀνὴρ λυπίζεται
Ἐσθλῆς ἄμεινον, ὐδὲ ῥίγιον κακῆς.

*LONDON:*

PRINTED FOR C. COOKE, No. 17,
PATER-NOSTER-ROW.

BRITISH MUSEUM

# AMELIA.

## BOOK IX.

### CHAP. I.

*In which the History looks backwards.*

BEFORE we proceed farther with our history, it may be proper to look back a little, in order to account for the late conduct of Dr. Harrison; which however inconsistent it may have hitherto appeared, when examined to the bottom, will be found, I apprehend, to be truly congruous with all the rules of the most perfect prudence, as well as with the must consummate goodness.

We have already partly seen in what light Booth had been represented to the doctor abroad. Indeed, the accounts which were sent of the captain, as well by the curate as by a gentleman of the neighbourhood, were much grosser, and more to his disadvantage, than the doctor was pleased to set them forth in his letter to the person accused. What sense he had of Booth's conduct, was, however, manifest by that letter. Nevertheless he resolved to suspend his final judgment till his return; and though he censured him, would not absolutely condemn him without ocular demonstration.

The doctor, on his return to his parish, found all the accusations which had been transmitted to him, confirmed by many witnesses, of which the curate's wife, who had been formerly a friend to Amelia, and still preserved the outward appearance of friendship, was the strongest. She introduced all with---'I am sorry to say 'it'; and it is friendship which bids me speak; and it 'is for their good it should be told you:' after which beginnings, she never concluded a single speech without some horrid slander and bitter invective.

Beſides the malicious turn which was given to theſe affairs in the country, which were owing a good deal to misfortune, and ſome little perhaps to imprudence, the whole neighbourhood rung with ſeveral groſs and ſcandalous lyes, which were merely the inventions of his enemies, and of which the ſcene was laid in London ſince his abſence.

Poiſoned with all this malice, the doctor came to town, and learning where Booth lodged, went to make him a viſit. Indeed, it was the doctor, and no other, who had been at his lodgings that evening when Booth and Amelia were walking in the Park; and concerning which the reader may be pleaſed to remember ſo many ſtrange and odd conjectures.

Here the doctor ſaw the little gold watch, and all thoſe fine trinkets with which the noble lord had preſented the children; and which, from the anſwers given him by the poor ignorant innocent girl, he could have no doubt had been purchaſed within a few days by Amelia.

This account tallied ſo well with the ideas he had imbibed of Booth's extravagance in the country, that he firmly believed both the huſband and wife to be the vaineſt, ſillieſt, and moſt unjuſt people alive. It was, indeed, almoſt incredible, that two rational beings ſhould be guilty of ſuch abſurdity; but monſtruous and abſurd as it was, ocular demonſtration appeared to be the evidence againſt them.

The doctor departed from their lodgings enraged at this diſpoſed diſcovery, and unhappily for Booth, was engaged to ſupper that very evening with the country gentleman of whom Booth had rented a farm. As the the poor captain happened to be the ſubject of converſation, and occaſioned their comparing notes, the account which the doctor gave of what he had ſeen that evening, ſo incenſed the gentleman to whom Booth was likewiſe a debtor, that he vowed he would take a writ out againſt him the next morning, and have his body alive or dead. And the doctor was at laſt perſuaded to

do the ſame. Mr. Murphy was thereupon immediately ſent for, and the doctor in his preſence repeated again what he had ſeen at his lodgings, as the foundation of his ſuing him, which the attorney, as we have before ſeen, had blabbed to Atkinſon.

But no ſooner did the doctor hear that Booth was arreſted, than the wretched condition of his wife and family began to affect his mind. The children, who were to be utterly undone with their father, were entirely innocent; and as for Amelia herſelf, though he thought he had moſt convincing proofs of very blameable levity; yet his former friendſhip and affection to her were buſy to invent every excuſe, till, by very heavily loading the huſband, they lightened the ſuſpicion againſt the wife.

In this temper of mind, he reſolved to pay Amelia a ſecond viſit, and was on his way to Mrs. Elliſon, when the ſerjeant met him, and made himſelf known to him. The doctor took his old ſervant into a coffee-houſe, where he received from him ſuch an account of Booth and his family, that he deſired the ſerjeant to ſhew him preſently to Amelia; and this was the cordial which we mentioned at the end of the ninth chapter of the preceding book.

The doctor became ſoon ſatisfied concerning the trinkets which had given him ſo much uneaſineſs, and which had brought ſo much miſchief on the head of poor Booth. Amelia likewiſe gave the doctor ſome ſatisfaction as to what he had heard of her huſband's behaviour in the country; and aſſured him, upon her honour, that Booth could ſo well anſwer every complaint againſt his conduct, that ſhe had no doubt but that a man of the doctor's juſtice and candour would entirely acquit him, and would conſider him as an innocent unfortunate man, who was the object of a good man's compaſſion, not of his anger or reſentment.

This worthy clergyman, who was not deſirous of finding proofs to condemn the captain, or to juſtify his own vindictive proceedings, but, on the contrary, re-

joiced heartily in every piece of evidence which tended to clear up the character of his friend, gave a ready ear to all which Amelia ſaid. To this, indeed, he was induced by the love he always had for that lady, by the good opinion he entertained of her, as well as by pity for her preſent condition, than which nothing appeared more miſerable; for he found her in the higheſt agonies of grief and deſpair, with her two little children crying over their wretched mother. Theſe are, indeed, to a well diſpoſed mind, the moſt tragical ſights that human nature can furniſh, and afford a juſter motive to grief and tears in the beholder, than it would be to ſee all the heroes who have ever infeſted the earth, hanged all together in a ſtring.

The doctor felt this ſight as he ought. He immediately endeavoured to comfort the afflicted; in which he ſo well ſucceeded, that he reſtored to Amelia ſufficient ſpirits to give him the ſatisfaction we have mentioned; after which, he declared he would go and releaſe her huſband; which he accordingly did, in the manner we have above related.

## CHAP. II.

*In which the Hiſtory goes forward.*

WE now return to that period of our hiſtory, to which we had brought it at the end of our laſt book.

Booth and his friends arrived from the bailiff's, at the ſerjeant's lodgings; where Booth immediately ran up ſtairs to his Amelia; between whom I ſhall not attempt to deſcribe the meeting. Nothing certainly was ever more tender or more joyful. This however I will obſerve, that a very few of theſe exquiſite moments, of which the beſt minds only are capable, do, in reality, overbalance the longeſt enjoyments which can ever fall to the lot of the worſt.

Whilſt Booth and his wife were feaſting their ſouls with the moſt delicious mutual endearments, the doctor was fallen to play with the two little children below ſtairs. While he was thus engaged, the little boy did ſomewhat

ſomewhat amiſs; upon which the doctor ſaid, 'If you 'do ſo any more, I will take your papa away from you 'again.'---'Again, Sir,' ſaid the child; 'why was it 'you, then, that took away my papa before?'--- 'Suppoſe it was,' ſaid the doctor, 'would you not 'forgive me?'---'Yes,' cries the child, 'I would for-'give you, becauſe a chriſtian muſt forgive every body; 'but I ſhould hate you as long as I live.'

The doctor was ſo pleaſed with the boy's anſwer, that he caught him in his arms, and kiſſed him; at which time Booth and his wife returned. The doctor aſked which of them was their ſon's inſtructor in his religion: Booth anſwered, that he muſt confeſs Amelia had all the merit of that kind. 'I ſhould have rather 'thought he had learnt of his father,' cries the doctor, 'for he ſeems a good ſoldier-like chriſtian, and pro-'feſſes to hate his enemies with a very good grace.'

'How, Billy,' cries Amelia. 'I am ſure I did not 'teach you ſo.'

'I did not ſay I would hate my enemies, Madam,' cries the boy. 'I only ſaid I would hate papa's ene-'mies. Sure, mama, there is no harm in that: nay, 'I am ſure there is no harm in it; for I have heard 'you ſay the ſame thing a thouſand times.'

The doctor ſmiled on the child, and chucking him under the chin, told him, he muſt hate no body. And now Mrs. Atkinſon, who had provided a dinner for them all, deſired them to walk up, and partake of it.

And now it was that Booth was firſt made ac-quainted with the ſerjeant's marriage, as was Dr. Harriſon, both of whom greatly felicitated him up-on it.

Mrs. Atkinſon, who was, perhaps, a little more confounded than ſhe would have been had ſhe married a colonel, ſaid, 'If I have done wrong, Mrs. Booth is 'to anſwer for it; for ſhe made the match.---Indeed, 'Mr. Atkinſon, you are greatly obliged to the cha-'racter which this lady gives of you.'---'I hope he 'will deſerve it,' ſaid the doctor; 'and if the army

'hath

'hath not corrupted a good boy, I believe I may an-'swer for him.'

While our little company were enjoying that happineſs which never fails to attend converſation, where all preſent are pleaſed with each other, a viſitant arrived, who was, perhaps, not very welcome to any of them. This was no other than Colonel James; who entering the room with much gaiety, went directly up to Booth, embraced him, and expreſſed great ſatisfaction at finding him there; he then made an apology for not attending him in the morning, which he ſaid had been impoſſible; and that he had with the utmoſt difficulty put off ſome buſineſs of great conſequence, in order to ſerve him this afternoon: 'but I am glad on your account,' cried he to Booth, 'that my preſence was not neceſ-'ſary.'

Booth himſelf was extremely ſatisfied with the declaration, and failed not to return him as many thanks as he would have deſerved had he performed his promiſe; but the two ladies were not quite ſo well ſatisfied. As for the ſerjeant, he had ſlipped out of the room when the colonel entered, not entirely out of that baſhfulneſs which we have remarked him to be tainted with; but, indeed, from what had paſſed in the morning, he hated the ſight of the colonel, as well on the account of his wife as on that of his friend.

The doctor, on the contrary, on what he had formerly heard from both Amelia and her huſband of the colonel's generoſity and friendſhip, had built ſo good an opinion of him, that he was very much pleaſed with ſeeing him, and took the firſt opportunity of telling him ſo. 'Colonel,' ſaid the doctor, 'I have not the hap-'pineſs of being known to you; but I have long been 'deſirous of an acquaintance with a gentleman, in 'whoſe commendation I have heard ſo much from ſome 'preſent.' The colonel made a proper anſwer to this compliment, and they ſoon entered into a familiar converſation together: for the doctor was not difficult of acceſs; indeed, he held the ſtrange reſerve, which is

uſually

uſually practiſed in this nation between people who are in any degree ſtrangers to each other, to be very unbecoming the Chriſtian character.

The two ladies ſoon left the room; and the remainder of the viſit, which was not very long, paſſed in diſcourſe on various common ſubjects, not worth recording. In the concluſion, the colonel invited Booth and his lady, and the doctor, to dine with him the next day.

To give Colonel James his due commendation, he had ſhewn a great command of himſelf, and great preſence of mind on this occaſion; for, to ſpeak the plain truth, the viſit was intended to Amelia alone; nor did he expect, or perhaps deſire, any thing leſs than to find the captain at home. The great joy which he ſuddenly conveyed into his countenance at the unexpected ſight of his friend, is to be attributed to that noble art which is taught in thoſe excellent ſchools called the ſeveral courts of Europe. By this men are enabled to dreſs out their countenances as much at their own pleaſure, as they do their bodies; and to put on friendſhip with as much eaſe as they can a laced coat.

When the colonel and doctor were gone, Booth acquainted Amelia with the invitation he had received. She was ſo ſtruck with the news, and betrayed ſuch viſible marks of confuſion and uneaſineſs, that they could not have eſcaped Booth's obſervation, had ſuſpicion given him the leaſt hint to remark: but this, indeed, is the great optic glaſs helping us to diſcern plainly almoſt all that paſſes in the minds of others, without ſome uſe of which nothing is more purblind than human nature.

Amelia having recovered from her firſt perturbation, anſwered, 'My dear, I will dine wherever you pleaſe 'to lay your commands on me.'-- 'I am obliged to you, 'my dear ſoul,' cries Booth, 'your obedience ſhall be 'very eaſy; for my command will be, that you ſhall 'always follow your own inclinations.'---'My incli-'nations,' anſwered ſhe, 'would, I am afraid, be too 'unreaſonable

'unreasonable a confinement to you; for they would 'always lead me to be with you and your children, 'with at most a single friend or two, now and then.' ---'O my dear,' replied he, 'large companies give us 'a greater relish for our own society when we return to 'it; and we shall be extremely merry, for Dr. Harrison 'dines with us.'---'I hope you will, my dear,' cries she; 'but I own I should have been better pleased to 'have enjoyed a few days with yourself and the chil-'dren, with no other person but Mrs. Atkinson, for 'whom I have conceived a violent affection, and who 'would have given us but little interruption. How-'ever, if you have promised, I must undergo the pe-'nance.'---'Nay, child,' cried he, 'I am sure I would 'have refused, could I have guessed it had been in the 'least disagreeable to you; though I know your objec-'tion.'---'Objection,' cries Amelia eagerly, 'I have 'no objection!'---'Nay, nay,' said he, 'come be 'honest, I know your objection, though you are un-'willing to own it.'-----'Good heavens!' cried Ame-lia, frightened, 'what do you mean? what objection?' ---'Why,' answered he, 'to the company of Mrs. 'James: and I must confess she hath not behaved to you 'lately as you might have expected; but you ought 'to pass all that by, for the sake of her husband, to 'whom we have both so many obligations; who is the 'worthiest, honestest, and most generous fellow in the 'universe, and the best friend to me that ever man 'had.'

Amelia, who had far other suspicions, and began to fear that her husband had discovered them, was highly pleased, when she saw him taking a wrong scent. She gave, therefore, a little into the deceit, and acknow-ledged the truth of what he had mentioned; but said, that the pleasures she should have in complying with his desires, would highly recompense any dissatisfaction which might arise on any other account; and shortly after ended the conversation on this subject, with her chearfully promising to fulfil his promise. In

In reality, poor Amelia had now a moſt unpleaſant taſk to undertake; for ſhe thought it abſolutely neceſſary to conceal from her huſband the opinion ſhe had conceived of the colonel. For, as ſhe knew the character, as well of her huſband as of his friend, or rather enemy, (both being often ſynonymous in the language of the world) ſhe had the utmoſt reaſon to apprehend ſomething very fatal might attend her huſband's entertaining the ſame thoughts of James, which filled and tormented her own breaſt.

And, as ſhe knew that nothing but theſe thoughts could juſtify the leaſt unkind, or, indeed, the leaſt reſerved behaviour to James, who had, in all appearance, conferred the greateſt obligations upon Booth and herſelf, ſhe was reduced to a dilemma the moſt dreadful that can attend a virtuous woman, as it often gives the higheſt triumph, and ſometimes no little advantage, to the men of profeſſed gallantry.

In ſhort, to avoid giving any umbrage to her huſband, Amelia was forced to act in a manner which ſhe was conſcious muſt give encouragement to the colonel: a ſituation which, perhaps, requires as great prudence and delicacy, as any in which the heroic part of the female character can be exerted.

## CHAP. III.

*A Converſation between Dr. Harriſon and others.*

THE next day, Booth and his lady, with the doctor, met at Colonel James's, where Colonel Bath likewiſe made one of the company.

Nothing very remarkable paſſed at dinner, or till the ladies withdrew. During this time, however, the behaviour of Colonel James was ſuch as gave ſome uneaſineſs to Amelia, who well underſtood his meaning, though the particulars were too refined and ſubtle to be obſerved by any other preſent.

When the ladies were gone, which was as ſoon as Amelia could prevail on Mrs. James to depart, Colonel Bath, who had been pretty briſk with Champagne at dinner, ſoon began to diſplay his magnanimity. 'My brother

'brother tells me, young gentleman,' ſaid he to Booth, 'that you have been uſed very ill lately by ſome raſ-'cals; and I have no doubt but you will do yourſelf 'juſtice.'

Booth anſwered, that he did not know what he meant. 'Since I muſt mention it then,' cries the colonel, 'I hear you have been arreſted; and I think 'you know what ſatisfaction is to be required by a 'man of honour.'

'I beg, Sir,' ſays the doctor, 'no more may be 'mentioned of that matter. I am convinced no ſatis-'faction will be required of the captain, till he is able 'to give it.'

'I do not underſtand what you mean by able,' cries the colonel. To which the doctor anſwered, that it was of too tender a nature to ſpeak more of.

'Give me your hand, doctor,' cries the colonel; 'I ſee you are a man of honour, though you wear a 'gown. It is, as you ſay, a matter of a tender na-'ture. Nothing, indeed, is ſo tender as a man's ho-'nour. Curſe my liver, if any man; I mean, that is, 'if any gentleman, was to arreſt me, I would as ſurely 'cut his throat as----'

'How, Sir,' ſaid the doctor; 'would you compen-'ſate one breach of the law by a much greater, and 'pay your debts by committing murder?'

'Why do you mention law between gentlemen?' ſays the colonel. 'A man of honour wears his law by 'his ſide. And can the reſentment of an affront make 'a gentleman guilty of murder? and what greater af-'front can one man caſt upon another, than by arreſt-'ing him? I am convinced, that he who would put up 'an arreſt, would put up a ſlap in the face.'

Here the colonel looked extremely fierce, and the divine ſtared with aſtoniſhment at this doctrine; when Booth, who well knew the impoſſibility of oppoſing the colonel's humour with ſucceſs, began to play with it; and having firſt conveyed a private wink to the doctor, he ſaid, there might be caſes undoubtedly where ſuch

an

an affront ought to be reſented; but that there were others, where any reſentment was impracticable. 'As, for inſtance,' ſaid he, 'where the man is arreſted 'by a woman.'

'I could not be ſuppoſed to mean that caſe,' cries the colonel; 'and you are convinced I did not mean it.'

'To put an end to this diſcourſe at once, Sir,' ſaid the doctor, 'I was the plaintiff at whoſe ſuit this gen-'tleman was arreſted.'

'Was you ſo, Sir!' cries the colonel; 'then I have 'no more to ſay. Women and the clergy are upon 'the ſame footing. The long robed gentry are ex-'empted from the laws of honour.'

'I do not thank you for that exemption, Sir,' cries the doctor; 'and if honour and fighting are, as they 'ſeem to be, ſynonymous words with you, I believe 'there are ſome clergymen, who, in defence of their 'religion, or their country, or their friend, the only 'juſtifiable cauſes of fighting, except bare ſelf-defence, 'would fight as bravely as yourſelf, colonel; and that 'without being paid for it.'

'Sir, you are privileged,' ſays the colonel with great dignity; 'and you have my leave to ſay what you 'pleaſe. I reſpect your order, and you cannot offend 'me.'

'I will not offend you, colonel,' cries the doctor; 'and our order is very much obliged to you, ſince you 'profeſs ſo much reſpect to us, and pay none to our 'Maſter.'

'What maſter, Sir!' ſaid the colonel.

'That Maſter,' anſwered the doctor, 'who hath 'expreſsly forbidden all that cutting of throats to 'which you diſcover ſo much inclination.'

'O, your ſervant, Sir,' ſaid the colonel, 'I ſee 'what you are driving at; but you ſhall not perſuade 'me to think, that religion forces me to be a coward.'

'I deteſt and deſpiſe the name as much as you can,' cries the doctor; 'but you have a wrong idea of the 'word, colonel. What were all the Greeks and Ro-

'mans? were theſe cowards; and yet, did you ever 'hear of this butchery, which we call duelling, among 'them?'

'Yes, indeed, have I,' cries the colonel. 'What 'elſe is all Mr. Pope's Homer full of, but duels? Did 'not, what's his name, one of the Agamemnons, 'fight with that paultry raſcal Paris? and Diomede 'with, what d'ye call him there; and Hector, with, 'I forget his name, he that was Achilles's boſom 'friend; and afterwards with Achilles himſelf? Nay, 'and in Dryden's Virgil, is there any thing almoſt be-'ſides fighting?'

'You are a man of learning, colonel,' cries the doctor, 'but------'

'I thank you for that compliment,' ſaid the colonel. 'No, Sir, I do not pretend to learning; but I have 'ſome little reading, and I am not aſhamed to own it.'

'But are you ſure, colonel,' cries the doctor, 'that 'you have not made a ſmall miſtake? for I am apt to 'believe, both Mr. Pope and Mr. Dryden (though I 'cannot ſay I ever read a word of either of them) ſpeak 'of wars between nations, and not of private duels: 'for of the latter, I do not remember one ſingle inſtance 'in all the Greek and Roman ſtory. In ſhort, it is a 'modern cuſtom, introduced by barbarous nations 'ſince the times of chriſtianity; though it is a direct 'and audacious defiance to the chriſtian law, and is 'conſequently much more ſinful in us, than it would 'have been in the heathens.'

'Drink about, doctor,' cries the colonel, 'and let 'us call a new cauſe: for I perceive we ſhall never 'agree on this. You are a churchman, and I do not 'expect you to ſpeak your mind.'

'We are both of the ſame church, I hope,' cries the doctor.

'I am of the church of England, Sir,' anſwered the colonel, 'and will fight for it to the laſt drop of my 'blood.'

'It is very generous in you, colonel,' cries the doctor,

tor, 'to fight ſo zealouſly for a religion by which you 'are to be damned.'

'It is well for you, doctor,' cries the colonel, 'that you wear a gown; for by all the dignity of a 'man, if any other perſon had ſaid the words you have 'juſt uttered, I would have made him eat them! Aye, 'd---n me, and my ſword into the bargain.'

Booth began to be apprehenſive, that this diſpute might grow too warm; in which caſe he feared that the colonel's honour, together with the Champagne, might hurry him ſo far, as to forget the reſpect due, and which he profeſſed to pay, to the ſacerdotal robe. Booth, therefore, interpoſed between the diſputants, and ſaid, that the colonel had very rightly propoſed to call a new ſubject; for that it was impoſſible to reconcile accepting a challenge with the chriſtian religion, or refuſing it with the modern notion of honour. 'And 'you muſt allow it, doctor,' ſaid he, 'to be a very 'hard injunction for a man to become infamous; and 'more eſpecially for a ſoldier, who is to loſe his bread 'into the bargain.'

'Aye, Sir,' ſays the colonel with an air of triumph, 'what ſay you to that?'

'Why, I ſay,' cries the doctor, 'that it is much 'harder to be damned on the other ſide.'

'That may be,' ſaid the colonel; 'but d---n me, 'if I would take an affront of any man breathing for 'all that. And yet I believe myſelf to be as good a 'chriſtian as wears a head. My maxim is, never to 'give an affront, nor ever to take one; and I ſay, that 'is the maxim of a good chriſtian; and no man ſhall 'ever perſuade me to the contrary.'

'Well, Sir,' ſaid the doctor, 'ſince that is your 'reſolution, I hope no man will ever give you an af-'front.'

'I am obliged to you for your hope, doctor,' cries the colonel with a ſneer; 'and he that doth, will be 'obliged to you for lending him your gown: for, by

'the dignity of a man, nothing, out of petticoats, I 'believe, dares affront me.'

Colonel James had not hitherto joined in the discourse. In truth, his thoughts had been otherwise employed; nor is it very difficult for the reader to guess what had been the subject of them. Being waked, however, from his reverie, and having heard the two or three last speeches, he turned to his brother, and asked him, why he would introduce such a topic of conversation before a gentleman of Dr. Harrison's character.

Brother,' cried Bath, 'I own it was wrong, and I 'ask the doctor's pardon. I know not how it happened 'to arise; for you know, brother, I am not used to 'talk of these matters. They are generally poltroons 'that do. I think I need not be beholden to my 'tongue to declare I am none. I have shewn myself 'in a line of battle. I believe there is no man will 'deny that; I believe I may say no man dares deny 'that I have done my duty------'

The colonel was thus proceeding to prove that his prowess was neither the subject of his discourse, nor the object of his vanity, when a servant entered, and summoned the company to tea with the ladies; a summons which Colonel James instantly obeyed, and was followed by all the rest.

But as the tea-table conversation, though extremely delightful to those who are engaged in it, may probably appear somewhat dull to the reader, we will here put an end to the chapter.

## CHAP. IV.

### *A Dialogue between Booth and Amelia.*

THE next morning early, Booth went by appointment and waited on Colonel James; whence he returned to Amelia, in that kind of disposition which the great master of human passions would describe in Andromache, when he tells us she cried and smiled at the same instant.

Amelia plainly perceived the discomposure of his mind, in which the opposite affections of joy and grief

were

were ſtruggling for the ſuperiority, and begged to know the occaſion; upon which Booth ſpoke as follows:

'My dear,' ſaid he, 'I had no intention to conceal 'from you what hath paſſed this morning between me 'and the colonel, who hath oppreſſed me, if I may 'uſe that expreſſion, with obligations. Sure never 'man had ſuch a friend; for never was there ſo noble, 'ſo generous a heart! I cannot help this ebullition of 'gratitude, I really cannot.' Here he pauſed a moment, and wiped his eyes, and then proceeded---'You 'know, my dear, how gloomy the proſpect was yeſ-'terday before our eyes, how inevitably ruin ſtared 'me in the face; and the dreadful idea of having en-'tailed beggary on my Amelia and her poſterity, racked 'my mind: for, though by the goodneſs of the doctor 'I had regained my liberty, the debt yet remained; 'and if that worthy man had a deſign of forgiving me 'his ſhare, this muſt have been my utmoſt hope; and 'the condition in which I muſt ſtill have found myſelf 'need not to be expatiated on. In what light then 'ſhall I ſee, in what words ſhall I relate, the colonel's 'kindneſs! O, my dear Amelia, he hath removed 'the whole gloom at once, hath driven all deſpair out 'of my mind, and hath filled it with the moſt ſanguine, 'and, at the ſame time, the moſt reaſonable hopes of 'making a comfortable proviſion for yourſelf and my 'dear children. In the firſt place, then, he will ad-'vance me a ſum of money to pay off all my debts; 'and this on a bond to be repaid only when I ſhall be-'come colonel of a regiment, and not before. In the 'next place, he is gone this very morning to aſk a 'company for me, which is now vacant in the Weſt-'Indies; and as he intends to puſh this with all his 'intereſt, neither he nor I have any doubt of his ſuc-'ceſs. Now, my dear, comes the third; which, 'though perhaps it ought to give me the greateſt joy, 'ſuch is, I own, the weakneſs of my nature, that it rends 'my very heart-ſtrings aſunder. I cannot mention it;

'for I know it will give you equal pain; though I 'know on all proper occaſions you can exert a manly 'reſolution. You will not, I am convinced, oppoſe it, 'whatever you may ſuffer in complying. O, my dear 'Amelia, I muſt ſuffer likewiſe; yet I have reſolved 'to bear it! You know not what my poor heart hath 'ſuffered ſince he made the propoſal: it is love for you 'alone which could perſuade me to ſubmit to it. Con-'ſider our ſituation; conſider that of our children; re-'flect but on thoſe poor babes, whoſe future happineſs 'is at ſtake, and it muſt arm your reſolution. It is 'your intereſt and theirs that reconciled me to a propo-'ſal, which when the colonel firſt made it, ſtruck me 'with the utmoſt horror: he hath, indeed, from theſe 'motives, perſuaded me into a reſolution, which I 'thought impoſſible for any one to have perſuaded me 'into. O, my dear Amelia, let me intreat you to 'give me up to the good of your children; as I have 'promiſed the colonel to give you up to their intereſt 'and your own. If you refuſe theſe terms, we are 'ſtill undone; for he inſiſts abſolutely upon them. 'Think then, my love, however hard they may be, 'neceſſity compels us to ſubmit to them. I know in 'what light a woman, who loves like you, muſt con-'ſider ſuch a propoſal; and yet how many inſtances 'have you of women, who, from the ſame motives, 'have ſubmitted to the ſame!'

'What can you mean, Mr. Booth?' cries Amelia, trembling.

'Need I explain my meaning to you more?' an-ſwered Booth. 'Did I not ſay, I muſt give up my 'Amelia?'

'Give me up!' ſaid ſhe.

'For a time only, I mean,' anſwered he; 'for a 'ſhort time, perhaps. The colonel himſelf will take 'care it ſhall not be long; for I know his heart: I 'ſhall ſcarce have more joy in receiving you back, than 'he will have in reſtoring you to my arms. In the

'mean

'mean time, he will not only be a father to my chil-
'dren, but a huſband to you.'

'A huſband to me!' ſaid Amelia.

'Yes, my dear; a kind, a fond, a tender, an af-
'fectionate huſband. If I had not the moſt certain aſ-
'ſurances of this, doth my Amelia think I could be
'prevailed on to leave her? No, my Amelia, he is the
'only man on earth who could have prevailed on me;
'but I know, his houſe, his purſe, his protection,
'will be all at your command. And as for any diſlike
'you have conceived to his wife, let not that be any
'objection: for I am convinced he will not ſuffer her
'to inſult you; beſides, ſhe is extremely well-bred,
'and how much ſoever ſhe may hate you in her heart,
'ſhe will at leaſt treat you with civility.

'Nay, the invitation is not his, but her's; and I
'am convinced they will both behave to you with the
'greateſt friendſhip: his, I am ſure, will be ſincere,
'as to the wife of a friend entruſted to his care; and
'her's will, from good breeding, have not only the
'appearances, but the effects, of the trueſt friendſhip.'

'I underſtand you, my dear, at laſt,' ſaid ſhe (in-
deed ſhe had rambled into very ſtrange conceits from
ſome parts of his diſcourſe) 'and I will give you my
'reſolution in a word; I will do the duty of a wife;
'and that is, to attend her huſband wherever he goes.'

Booth attempted to reaſon with her but all to no purpoſe. She gave, indeed, a quiet hearing to all he ſaid, and even to thoſe parts which moſt diſpleaſed her ears; I mean, thoſe in which he exaggerated the great goodneſs and diſintereſted generoſity of his friend: but her reſolution remained inflexible, and reſiſted the force of all his arguments with a ſteadineſs of oppoſition which it would have been almoſt excuſable in him to have conſtrued into ſtubbornneſs.

The doctor arrived in the midſt of the diſpute; and, having heard the merits of the cauſe on both ſides, deli-
vered his opinion in the following words---

'I have always thought it, my dear children, a

'matter

'matter of the utmoſt nicety to interfere in any differ-
'ences between huſband and wife; but, ſince you both
'deſire me, with ſuch earneſtneſs, to give you my ſen-
'timents on the preſent conteſt between you, I will
'give you my thoughts as well as I am able. In the
'firſt place, then, can any thing be more reaſonable,
'than for a wife to deſire to attend her huſband? It is,
'as my favourite child obſerves, no more than a deſire
'to do her duty; and I make no doubt but that is one
'great reaſon of her inſiſting on it. And how can you
'yourſelf oppoſe it? Can love be it's own enemy? or
'can a huſband, who is fond of his wife, content him-
'ſelf almoſt on any account with a long abſence from
'her?'

'You ſpeak like an angel, my dear Doctor Harri-
'ſon,' anſwered Amelia: 'I am ſure, if he loved as
'tenderly as I do, he could on no account ſubmit
'to it.'

'Pardon me, child,' cried the doctor? 'there are
'ſome reaſons, which would not only juſtify his leaving
'you, but which muſt force him, if he hath any real
'love for you, joined with common ſenſe, to make
'that election. If it was neceſſary, for inſtance, either
'to your good, or the good of your children, he would
'not deſerve the name of a man, I am ſure not that of
'a huſband, if he heſitated a moment. Nay, in that
'caſe, I am convinced, you yourſelf would be an ad-
'vocate for what you now oppoſe. I fancy, there-
'fore, I miſtook him, when I apprehended he ſaid,
'that the colonel made his leaving you behind as the
'condition of getting him the commiſſion; for I know
'my dear child hath too much goodneſs, and too much
'ſenſe, and too much reſolution, to prefer any tempo-
'rary indulgence of her own paſſions to the ſolid ad-
'vantages of her whole family.'

'There, my dear!' cries Booth; 'I knew what
'opinion the doctor would be of. Nay, I am certain,
'there is not a wiſe man in the kingdom who would ſay
'otherwiſe.'

'Do

'Do not abuſe me, young gentleman,' ſaid the doctor, 'with appellations I do not deſerve.'

'I abuſe you, my dear doctor!' cries Booth.

'Yes, my dear Sir,' anſwered the doctor, 'you inſinuated ſlily that I was wiſe; which, as the world underſtands the phraſe, I ſhould be aſhamed of: and my comfort is, that no one can accuſe me juſtly of it; I have juſt given an inſtance of the contrary, by throwing away my advice.'

'I hope, Sir,' cries Booth, 'that will not be the caſe.'

'Yes, Sir,' anſwered the doctor, 'I know it will be the caſe in the preſent inſtance; for either you will not go at all, or my little turtle here will go with you.'

'You are in the right, doctor,' cries Amelia.

'I am ſorry for it,' ſaid the doctor; 'for then, I aſſure you, you are in the wrong.'

'Indeed,' cries Amelia, 'if you knew all my reaſons, you would ſay they were very ſtrong ones.'

'Very probably,' cries the doctor. 'The knowledge that they are in the wrong, is a very ſtrong reaſon to ſome women to continue ſo.'

'Nay, doctor,' cries Amelia, 'you ſhall never perſuade me to that. I will not believe that any human being ever did an action merely becauſe they knew it to be wrong.'

'I am obliged to you, my dear child,' ſaid the doctor, 'for declaring your reſolution of not being perſuaded. Your huſband would never call me a wiſe man again, if, after the declaration, I ſhould attempt to perſuade you.'

'Well, I muſt be content,' cries Amelia, 'to let you think as you pleaſe.'

'That is very gracious, indeed,' ſaid the doctor. 'Surely, in a country where the church ſuffers others to think as they pleaſe, it would be very hard if they had not themſelves the ſame liberty. And yet, as unreaſonable as the power of controuling men's

'thoughts

'thoughts is repreſented, I will ſhew you how you 'ſhall controul mine, whenever you deſire it.'

'How, pray,' cries Amelia. 'I ſhould greatly 'eſteem that power.'

'Why, whenever you act like a wiſe woman,' cries the doctor, 'you will force me to think you ſo; and, 'whenever you are pleaſed to act as you do now, I 'ſhall be obliged, whether I will or no, to think as I 'do now.'

'Nay, dear doctor,' cries Booth, 'I am convinced 'my Amelia will never do any thing to forfeit your 'good opinion. Conſider but the cruel hardſhip of 'what ſhe is to undergo, and you will make allowances 'for the difficulty ſhe makes in complying. To ſay 'the truth, when I examine my own heart, I have 'more obligations to her than appear at firſt ſight; for, 'by obliging me to find arguments to perſuade her, 'ſhe hath aſſiſted me in conquering myſelf. Indeed, 'if ſhe had ſhewn more reſolution, I ſhould have ſhewn 'leſs.'

'So you think it neceſſary, then,' ſaid the doctor, 'that there ſhould be one fool at leaſt in every married 'couple. A mighty reſolution truly! and well worth 'your valuing yourſelf upon, to part with your wife 'for a few months, in order to make the fortune of her 'and your children. When you are to leave her too in 'the care and protection of a friend that gives credit to 'the old ſtories of friendſhip, and doth an honour to 'human nature. What, in the name of goodneſs, do 'either of you think that you have made an union to 'endure for ever? How will either of you bear that 'ſeparation which muſt ſome time or other, and per-'haps very ſoon, be the lot of one you? Have you 'forgot that you are both mortal? As for chriſti-'anity, I ſee you have reſigned all pretenſions to it: 'for I make no doubt, but that you have ſo ſet your 'hearts on the happineſs you enjoy here together, that 'neither of you ever think a word of hereafter.'

Amelia now burſt into tears: upon which Booth begged

begged the doctor to proceed no farther. Indeed, he would not have wanted the caution: for, however blunt he appeared in his diſcourſe, he had a tenderneſs of heart which is rarely found among men; for which I know no other reaſon, than that true goodneſs is rarely found among them: for I am firmly perſuaded, that the latter never poſſeſſed any human mind in any degree, without being attended by as large a portion of the former.

Thus ended the converſation on this ſubject: what followed is not worth relating, till the doctor carried off Booth with him to take a walk in the Park.

## CHAP. V.

### *A Converſation between Amelia and Doctor Harriſon, with the Reſult.*

AMELIA being left alone, began to conſider ſeriouſly of her condition; ſhe ſaw it would be very difficult to reſiſt the importunities of her huſband, backed by the authority of the doctor; eſpecially as ſhe well knew how unreaſonable her declaration muſt appear to every one who was ignorant of her real motives to perſevere in it. On the other hand, ſhe was fully determined, whatever might be the conſequence, to adhere firmly to her reſolution of not accepting the colonel's invitation.

When ſhe had turned the matter every way in her mind, and vexed and tormented herſelf with much uneaſy reflection upon it, a thought at laſt occurred to her, which immediately brought her ſome comfort. This was, to make a confident of the doctor, and to impart to him the whole truth. This method, indeed, appeared to her now to be ſo adviſeable, that ſhe wondered ſhe had not hit upon it ſooner; but it is the nature of deſpair to blind us all to the means of ſafety, however eaſy and apparent they may be.

Having fixed her purpoſe in her mind, ſhe wrote a ſhort note to the doctor, in which ſhe acquainted him that ſhe had ſomething of great moment to impart to him, which muſt be an entire ſecret from her huſband, and begged that ſhe might have an opportunity of communicating it as ſoon as poſſible.

Doctor

Doctor Harriſon received the letter that afternoon, and immediately complied with Amelia's requeſt in viſiting her. He found her drinking tea with her huſband and Mrs. Atkinſon, and ſat down and joined the company.

Soon after the removal of the tea-table, Mrs. Atkinſon left the room. The doctor then turning to Booth, ſaid---'I hope, captain, you have a true ſenſe of the 'obedience due to the church, though our clergy do 'not often exact it. However, it is proper to exerciſe 'our power ſometimes, in order to remind the laity of 'their duty. I muſt tell you, therefore, that I have 'ſome private buſineſs with your wife; and I expect 'your immediate abſence.'

'Upon my word, doctor,' anſwered Booth, 'no 'popiſh confeſſor, I firmly believe, ever pronounced 'his will and pleaſure with more gravity and dignity; 'none therefore was ever more immediately obeyed 'than you ſhall be.' Booth then quitted the room, and deſired the doctor to recal him when his buſineſs with the lady was over.

Doctor Harriſon promiſed he would; and then turning to Amelia, he ſaid---'Thus far, Madam, I have 'obeyed your commands, and am now ready to receive 'the important ſecret which you mention in your note.'

Amelia now informed her friend of all ſhe knew, all ſhe had ſeen and heard, and all that ſhe ſuſpected of the colonel. The good man ſeemed greatly ſhocked at the relation, and remained in a ſilent aſtoniſhment. Upon which Amelia ſaid---'Is villainy ſo rare a thing, Sir, 'that it ſhould ſo much ſurprize you?'---'No, child,' cried he; 'but I am ſhocked at ſeeing it ſo artfully 'diſguiſed under the appearance of ſo much virtue. 'And to confeſs the truth, I believe my own vanity is 'a little hurt in having been ſo groſsly impoſed upon. 'Indeed, I had a very high regard for this man; for, 'beſides the great character given him by your huſband, and the many facts I have heard ſo much redounding to his honour, he hath the faireſt and moſt

'promiſing

'promiſing appearance I have ever yet beheld. A 'good face, they ſay, is a letter of recommendation. 'O Nature, Nature, why art thou ſo diſhoneſt, as ever 'to ſend men with theſe falſe recommendations into the 'world!'

'Indeed, my dear Sir, I begin to grow entirely ſick 'of it,' cries Amelia: 'for ſure all mankind almoſt 'are villains in their hearts.'

'Fie, child,' cries the doctor. 'Do not make a 'concluſion ſo much to the diſhonour of the great Cre-'ator. The nature of man is far from being in itſelf 'evil: it abounds with benevolence, charity, and 'pity; coveting praiſe and honour, and ſhunning 'ſhame and diſgrace. Bad education, bad habits, 'and bad cuſtoms, debauch our nature, and drive it 'headlong, as it were, into vice. The governors of 'the world, and I am afraid the prieſthood, are na-'ſwerable for the badneſs of it. Inſtead of diſcou-'raging wickedneſs to the utmoſt of their power, both 'are apt to connive at it. In the great ſin of adultery, 'for inſtance; hath the government provided any law 'to puniſh it; or doth the prieſt take any care to cor-'rect it? On the contrary, is the moſt notorious 'practice of it any detriment to a man's fortune, or to 'his reputation in the world? doth it exclude from him 'any preferment in the ſtate, I had almoſt ſaid, in the 'church? Is it any blotch in his eſcutcheon, any 'bar to his honour? Is he not to be found every day 'in the aſſemblies of women of the higheſt quality, in 'the cloſets of the greateſt men, and even at the tables 'of biſhops? What wonder, then, if the community 'in general treat this monſtrous crime as matter of jeſt, 'and that men give way to the temptations of a violent 'appetite, when the indulgence of it is protected by 'law, and countenanced by cuſtom? I am convinced 'there are good ſtamina in the nature of this very man: 'for he hath done acts of friendſhip and generoſity to 'your huſband, before he could have any evil deſign on 'your chaſtity; and in a chriſtian ſociety, which I no

'more eſteem this nation to be, than I do any part of 'Turky, I doubt not but this very colonel would have 'made a worthy and valuable member.'

'Indeed, my dear Sir,' cries Amelia, 'you are the 'wiſeſt as well as beſt man in the world------'

'Not a word of my wiſdom,' cries the doctor. 'I 'have not a grain; I am not the leaſt verſed in the 'Chrematiſtic art*, as an old friend of mine calls it. 'I know not how to get a ſhilling: nor how to keep it 'in my pocket, if I had it.'

'But you underſtand human nature to the bottom,' anſwered Amelia; 'and your mind is the treaſury of all 'ancient and modern learning.'

'You are a little flatterer,' cries the doctor; 'but I 'diſlike you not for it. And to ſhew you I do not, I 'will return your flattery; and tell you, you have 'acted with great prudence in concealing this affair 'from your huſband; but you have drawn me into a 'ſcrape: for I have promiſed to dine with this fellow 'again to-morrow; and you have made it impoſſible 'for me to keep my word.'

'Nay, but dear Sir,' cries Amelia, 'for Heavens' 'ſake take care. If you ſhew any kind of diſreſpect to 'the colonel, my huſband may be led into ſome ſuſpi-'cion, eſpecially after our conference.'

'Fear nothing, child. I will give him no hint; 'and that I may be certain of not doing it, I will 'ſtay away. You do not think, I hope, that I will 'join in a chearful converſation with ſuch a man; that 'I will ſo far betray my character, as to give any 'countenance to ſuch flagitious proceedings. Beſides, 'my promiſe was only conditional; and I do not 'know whether I could otherwiſe have kept it: for I 'expect an old friend every day, who comes to town 'twenty miles on foot to ſee me; whom I ſhall not

*The art of getting wealth is ſo called by Ariſtotle in his Politics.

'part with on any account; for, as he is very poor, he 'may imagine I treat him with diſreſpect.'

'Well, Sir,' cries Amelia, 'I muſt admire you, 'and love you for your goodneſs.'

'Muſt you love me?' cries the doctor. 'I could 'cure you in a minute if I pleaſed.'

'Indeed, I defy you, Sir,' ſaid Amelia.

'If I could but perſuade you,' anſwered he, 'that 'I thought you not handſome, away would vaniſh all 'ideas of goodneſs in an inſtant. Confeſs honeſtly, 'would they not?'

'Perhaps I might blame the goodneſs of your eyes,' replied Amelia; 'and that is perhaps an honeſter con-'feſſion than you expected. But do, pray, Sir, be 'ſerious; and give me your advice what to do. Con-'ſider the difficult game I have to play; for I am ſure, 'after what I have told you, you would not even ſuffer 'me to remain under the roof of this colonel.'

'No, indeed, would I not,' ſaid the doctor, 'while 'I have a houſe of my own to entertain you.'

'But how to diſſuade my huſband,' continued ſhe, 'without giving him any ſuſpicion of the real cauſe, 'the conſequences of his gueſſing at which I tremble to 'think upon.'

'I will conſult my pillow upon it,' ſaid the doctor, 'and in the morning you ſhall ſee me again. In 'the mean time be comforted, and compoſe the per-'turbations of your mind.'

'Well, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'I put my whole truſt in 'you.'

'I am ſorry to hear it,' cries the doctor; 'your 'innocence may give you a very confident truſt in a 'much more powerful Aſſiſtance. However, I will 'do all I can to ſerve you; and now, if you pleaſe, we 'will call back your huſband: for, upon my word, he 'hath ſhewn a good catholic patience. And where is 'the honeſt ſerjeant and his wife? I am pleaſed with 'the behaviour of you both to that worthy fellow, in 'oppoſition to the cuſtom of the world; which, inſtead

'of being formed on the precepts of our religion to 'conſider each other as brethren, teaches us to regard 'thoſe who are a degeee below us, either in rank or 'fortune, as a ſpecies of beings of an inferior order in 'the creation.'

The captain now returned into the room, as did the ſerjeant and Mrs. Atkinſon; and the two couple, with the doctor, ſpent the evening together in great mirth and feſtivity: for the doctor was one of the beſt companions in the world; and a vein of chearfulneſs, good-humour, and pleaſantry, ran through his converſation, with which it was impoſſible to reſiſt being pleaſed.

## CHAP. VI.

*Containing as ſurprizing an Accident as is perhaps recorded in Hiſtory.*

BOOTH had acquainted the ſerjeant with the great goodneſs of Colonel James, and with the chearful proſpects which he entertained from it. This Atkinſon, behind the curtain, communicated to his wife. The concluſions which ſhe drew from it, need ſcarce be hinted to the reader. She made, indeed, no ſcruple of plainly and bluntly telling her huſband that the colonel had a moſt manifeſt intention to attack the chaſtity of Amelia.

This thought gave the poor ſerjeant great uneaſineſs; and after having kept him long awake, tormented him in his ſleep with a moſt horrid dream, in which he imagined that he ſaw the colonel ſtanding by the bed-ſide of Amelia, with a naked ſword in his hand, and threatening to ſtab her inſtantly, unleſs ſhe complied with his deſires. Upon this, the ſerjeant ſtarted up in his bed, and catching his wife by the throat, cried out---'D---n 'you, put up your ſword this inſtant, and leave the 'room, or by Heaven I'll drive mine to your heart's 'blood.'

This rough treatment immediately rouzed Mrs. Atkinſon from her ſleep; who no ſooner perceived the poſition of her huſband, and felt his hand graſping her throat,

throat, than she gave a violent shriek, and presently fell into a fit.

Atkinson now waked likewise, and soon became sensible of the violent agitations of his wife. He immediately leapt out of bed, and running for a bottle of water, began to sprinkle her very plentifully; but all to no purpose; she neither spoke, nor gave any symptoms of recovery. Atkinson then began to roar aloud, upon which Booth, who lay under him, jumped from his bed, and ran up with the lighted candle in his hand. The serjeant had no sooner taken the candle, than he ran with it to the bed-side. Here he beheld a sight which almost deprived him of his senses. The bed appeared to be all over blood, and his wife weltering in the midst of it. Upon this, the serjeant, almost in a frenzy, cried out---'O Heavens! I have killed my wife. I 'have stabbed her, I have stabbed her!'---'What can 'be the meaning of all this?' said Booth. 'O, Sir,' cries the serjeant, 'I dreamt I was rescuing your lady 'from the hands of Colonel James, and I have killed 'my poor wife.' Here he threw himself upon the bed by her, caught her in his arms, and behaved like one frantic with despair.

By this time, Amelia had thrown on a wrapping-gown, and was come up into the room, where the serjeant and his wife were lying on the bed, and Booth standing like a motionless statue by the bed-side. Amelia had some difficulty to conquer the effects of her own surprize on this occasion; for a more ghastly and horrible sight than the bed presented, could not be conceived.

Amelia sent Booth to call up the maid of the house, in order to lend her assistance; but, before his return, Mrs. Atkinson began to come to herself; and soon after, to the inexpressible joy of the serjeant, it was discovered she had no wound. Indeed, the delicate nose of Amelia soon made that discovery, which the grosser smell of the serjeant, and perhaps his fright, had prevented him from making: for now it appeared that the red liquor

with which the bed was ſtained, though it may, perhaps, ſometimes run through the veins of a fine lady, was not what is properly called blood; but was, indeed, no other than cherry-brandy, a bottle of which Mrs. Atkinſon always kept in her room to be ready for immediate uſe; and to which ſhe uſed to apply for comfort in all her afflictions. This the poor ſerjeant, in his extreme hurry, had miſtaken for a bottle of water. Matters were now ſoon accommodated; and no other miſchief appeared to be done, unleſs to the bed-cloaths. Amelia and Booth returned back to their room; and Mrs. Atkinſon roſe from her bed, in order to equip it with a pair of clean ſheets.

And thus this adventure would have ended without producing any kind of conſequence, had not the words which the ſerjeant uttered in his frenzy made ſome ſlight impreſſion on Booth; ſo much at leaſt, as to awaken his curioſity: ſo that in the morning, when he aroſe, he ſent for the ſerjeant, and deſired to hear the particulars of this dream, ſince Amelia was concerned in it.

The ſerjeant, at firſt, ſeemed unwilling to comply, and endeavoured to make excuſes. This, perhaps, increaſed Booth's curioſity, and he ſaid---'Nay, I am 'reſolved to hear it. Why, you ſimpleton, do you imagine me weak enough to be affected by a dream, 'however terrible it may be?'

'Nay, Sir,' cries the ſerjeant, 'as for that matter, 'dreams have ſometimes fallen out to be true. One of 'my own, I know, did ſo concerning your honour; 'for when you courted my young lady, I dreamt you 'was married to her; and yet it was at a time when 'neither I myſelf, nor any of the country, thought you 'would ever obtain her. But Heaven forbid this 'dream ſhould ever come to paſs!'

'Why, what was this dream?' cries Booth. 'I 'inſiſt on knowing.'

'To be ſure, Sir,' cries the ſerjeant, 'I muſt not 'refuſe you; but, I hope, you will never think any 'more of it. Why then, Sir, I dreamt that your ho-

'nour

'nour was gone to the Weſt Indies, and had left my 'lady in the care of Colonel James; and laſt night I 'dreamt the colonel came to my lady's bed-ſide, offering 'to raviſh her; and with a drawn ſword in his hand, 'threatening to ſtab her that moment, unleſs ſhe would 'comply with his deſires. How I came to be by I 'know not; but I dreamt I ruſhed upon him, caught 'him by the throat, and ſwore I would put him to 'death, unleſs he inſtantly left the room. Here I 'waked, and this was my dream. I never paid any 'regard to a dream in my life; but, indeed, I never 'dreamt any thing ſo very plain as this. It appeared 'downright reality. I am ſure, I have left the marks 'of my fingers in my wife's throat. I would not have 'taken an hundred pounds to have uſed her ſo.

'Faith,' cries Booth, 'it was an odd dream; and 'not ſo eaſily to be accounted for, as that you had 'formerly of my marriage; for as Shakeſpeare ſays, '*Dreams denote a foregone concluſion.* Now it is im-'poſſible you ſhould ever have thought of any ſuch 'matter as this.'

'However, Sir,' cries the ſerjeant, 'it is in your 'honour's power to prevent any poſſibility of this 'dream's coming to paſs, by not leaving my lady to 'the care of the colonel. If you muſt go from her, 'certainly there are other places where ſhe may be with 'great ſafety; and ſince my wife tells me my lady is ſo 'very unwilling, whatever reaſons ſhe may have, I 'hope your honour will oblige her.'

'Now I recollect it,' cries Booth, 'Mrs. Atkinſon 'hath once or twice dropped ſome diſreſpectful words 'of the colonel. He hath done ſomething to diſoblige 'her.'

'He hath indeed, Sir,' replied the ſerjeant: 'he 'hath ſaid that of her which ſhe does not deſerve, and 'for which, if he had not been my ſuperior officer, I 'would have cut both his ears off. Nay, for that 'matter, he can ſpeak ill of other people beſides her.'

'Do you know, Atkinſon,' cries Booth, very gravely,

gravely, 'that you are talking of the deareſt friend 'I have?'

'To be honeſt, then,' anſwered the ſerjeant, 'I do 'not think ſo. If I did, I ſhould love him much bet-'ter than I do.'

'I muſt and will have this explained,' cries Booth. 'I have too good an opinion of you, Atkinſon, to 'think you would drop ſuch things as you have, with-'out ſome reaſon: and I will know it.'

'I am ſorry I have dropped a word,' cries Atkin-'ſon. I am ſure I did not intend it: and your honour 'hath drawn it from me unawares.'

'Indeed, Atkinſon,' cries Booth, 'you have made 'me very uneaſy, and I muſt be ſatisfied.'

'Then, Sir,' ſaid the ſerjeant, 'you ſhall give me 'your word of honour; or I will be cut into ten thou-'ſand pieces before I will mention another ſyllable.'

'What ſhall I promiſe?' ſaid Booth.

'That you will not reſent any thing I ſhall lay to 'the colonel,' anſwered Atkinſon.

'Reſent! Well, I give you my honour,' ſaid Booth.

The ſerjeant made him bind himſelf over and over again; and then related to him the ſcene which formerly paſſed between the colonel and himſelf, as far as concerned Booth himſelf; but concealed all that more immediately related to Amelia.

'Atkinſon,' cries Booth, 'I cannot be angry with 'you; for I know you love me, and I have many obli-'gations to you; but you have done wrong in cen-'ſuring the colonel for what he ſaid of me. I deſerve 'all that he ſaid; and his cenſures proceeded from his 'friendſhip.'

'But it was not ſo kind, Sir,' ſaid Atkinſon, 'to 'ſay ſuch things to me, who am but a ſerjeant, and at 'ſuch a time too.'

'I will hear no more,' cries Booth. 'Be aſſured, 'you are the only man I would forgive on this occaſion; 'and I forgive you only on condition you never ſpeak

'a word

'a word more of this nature. This ſilly dream hath 'intoxicated you.'

'I have done, Sir,' cries the ſerjeant. 'I know 'my diſtance, and whom I am to obey: but I have 'one favour to beg of your honour, never to mention 'a word of what I have ſaid to my lady; for I know 'ſhe never would forgive me: I know ſhe never would, 'by what my wife hath told me. Beſides, you need 'not mention it, Sir, to my lady; for ſhe knows it 'already, and a great deal more.'

Booth preſently parted from the ſerjeant, having deſired him to cloſe his lips on this occaſion; and repaired to his wife, to whom he related the ſerjeant's dream.

Amelia turned as white as ſnow, and fell into ſo violent a trembling, that Booth plainly perceived her emotion, and immediately partook of it himſelf. 'Sure, 'my dear,' ſaid he, ſtaring wildly, 'there is more in 'this than I know. A ſilly dream could not ſo diſ-'compoſe you. I beg you, I entreat you to tell me, 'hath ever Colonel James---'

At the very mention of the colonel's name, Amelia fell on her knees, and begged her huſband not to frighten her.

'What do I ſay, my dear love,' cries Booth, 'that 'can frighten you?'

'Nothing, my dear,' ſaid ſhe. 'But my ſpirits 'are ſo diſcompoſed with the dreadful ſcene I ſaw laſt 'night, that a dream, which at another time I ſhould 'have laughed at, hath ſhocked me. Do but promiſe me 'that you will not leave me behind you, and I am eaſy.'

'You may ſay ſo,' cries Booth; 'for I will never 'deny you any thing. But make me eaſy too. I 'muſt know if you have ſeen any thing in Colonel 'James to diſpleaſe you.'

'Why ſhould you ſuſpect it?' cries Amelia.

'You torment me to death,' cries Booth. 'By 'heavens! I will know the truth. Hath he ever ſaid 'or done any thing which you diſlike?'

'How, my dear,' ſaid Amelia, 'can you imagine

'I ſhould

'I ſhould diſlike a man who is ſo much your friend? 'Think of all the obligations you have to him, and 'then you may eaſily reſolve yourſelf. Do you think, 'becauſe I refuſe to ſtay behind you in his houſe, that 'I have any objection to him? No, my dear, had he 'done a thouſand times more than he hath, was he an 'angel inſtead of a man, I would not quit my Billy. 'There's the ſore, my dear; there's the miſery, to be 'left by you.'

Booth embraced her with the moſt paſſionate raptures, and looking on her with inexpreſſible tenderneſs, cried ---'Upon my ſoul, I am not worthy of you! I am a 'fool; and yet you cannot blame me. If the ſtupid 'miſer hoards, with ſuch care, his worthleſs treaſure; 'if he watches it with ſuch anxiety; if every apprehen-'ſion of another's ſharing the leaſt part, fills his ſoul 'with ſuch agonies; O Amelia! what muſt be my 'condition, what terrors muſt I feel, while I am watch-'ing over a jewel of ſuch real, ſuch ineſtimable worth?'

'I can, with great truth, return the compliment,' cries Amelia. 'I have my treaſure, too; and I am ſo 'much a miſer, that no force ſhould ever tear me from it.'

'I am aſhamed of my folly,' cries Booth; 'and yet 'it is all from extreme tenderneſs. Nay, you yourſelf 'are the occaſion. Why will you ever attempt to keep 'a ſecret from me? Do you think I ſhould have re-'ſented to my friend his juſt cenſure of my conduct?'

'What cenſure, my dear love?' cries Amelia.

'Nay the ſerjeant hath told me all,' cries Booth. 'Nay, and that he hath told it to you. Poor ſoul! 'thou couldſt not endure to hear me accuſed, though 'never ſo juſtly, and by ſo good a friend. Indeed, 'my dear, I have diſcovered the cauſe of that reſent-'ment to the colonel, which you could not hide from 'me. I love you, I adore you for it. Indeed, 'I could not forgive a ſlighting word on you. But 'why do I compare things ſo unlike? what the colonel 'ſaid of me was juſt and true; every reflection on my 'Amelia muſt be falſe and villainous.'

The

The diſcernment of Amelia was extremely quick; and ſhe now perceived what had happened, and how much her huſband knew of the truth. She reſolved therefore to humour him, and fell ſeverely on Colonel James for what he had ſaid to the ſerjeant, which Booth endeavoured all he could to ſoften. And thus ended this affair, which had brought Booth to the very brink of a diſcovery, which muſt have given him the higheſt torment, if it had not produced any of thoſe tragical effects which Amelia apprehended.

## CHAP. VII.

*In which the Author appears to be Maſter of that profound Learning, called Knowledge of the Town.*

MRS. James now came to pay a morning's viſit to Amelia. She entered the room with her uſual gaiety, and after a ſlight preface, addreſſing herſelf to Booth, ſaid ſhe had been quarrelling with her huſband on his account. 'I know not,' ſaid ſhe, 'what he 'means by thinking of ſending you the Lord knows 'whither. I have inſiſted on his aſking ſomething for 'you nearer home. And it would be the hardeſt thing 'in the world, if he ſhould not obtain it. Are we re-'ſolved never to encourage merit; but to throw away 'all our preferments on thoſe who do not deſerve them? 'What a ſet of contemptible wretches do we ſee ſtrut-'ting about the town in ſcarlet!'

Booth made a very low bow, and modeſtly ſpoke in diſparagement of himſelf. To which ſhe anſwered---- 'Indeed, Mr. Booth, you have merit. I have heard 'it from my brother, who is a judge of thoſe matters, 'and I am ſure cannot be ſuſpected of flattery. He is 'your friend as well as myſelf; and we will never let Mr. 'James reſt till he hath got you a commiſſion in England.

Booth bowed again, and was offering to ſpeak, but ſhe interrupted him, ſaying---'I will have no thanks, 'nor no fine ſpeeches. If I can do you any ſervice, 'I ſhall think I am only paying the debt of friendſhip 'to my dear Mrs. Booth.'

Amelia, who had long ſince forgot the diſlike ſhe had taken

taken to Mrs. James at her first seeing her in town, had attributed it to the right cause, and had begun to resume her former friendship for her, expressed very warm sentiments of gratitude on this occasion. She told Mrs. James, she should be eternally obliged to her if she could succeed in her kind endeavours; for that the thoughts of parting again with her husband had given her the utmost concern. 'Indeed,' added she, 'I cannot help 'saying, he hath some merit in the service; for he hath 'received two dreadful wounds in it, one of which 'very greatly endangered his life; and I am convinced, 'if his pretensions were backed with any interest, he 'would not fail of success.'

'They shall be backed with interest, cries Mrs. James, 'if my husband hath any. He hath no favour 'to ask for himself, nor for any other friend that I 'know of; and, indeed, to grant a man his just due, 'ought hardly to be thought a favour. Resume your 'old gaiety, therefore, my dear Emily. Lord, I re-'member the time when you was much the gayer crea-'ture of the two. But you make an arrant mope of 'yourself, by confining yourself at home. One never 'meets you any where. Come, you shall go with me 'to the Lady Betty Castleton's.'

'Indeed, you must excuse me, my dear,' answered Amelia; 'I do not know Lady Betty.'

'Not know Lady Betty! how is that possible? But 'no matter, I will introduce you. She keeps a morn-'ing rout; hardly a rout, indeed; a little bit of a 'drum, only four or five tables. Come, take your 'capuchine; you positively shall go.---Booth, you shall 'go with us too. Though you are with your wife, 'another woman will keep you in countenance.'

'La! child,' cries Amelia, 'how you rattle!'

'I am in spirits,' answered Mrs. James, 'this 'morning: for I won four rubbers together last night; 'and betted the things, and won almost every bet. I 'am in luck, and we will contrive to be partners. 'Come.'

'Nay,

'Nay, child, you ſhall not refuſe Mrs. James,' ſaid Booth.

'I have ſcarce ſeen my children to-day,' anſwered Amelia. 'Beſides, I mortally deteſt cards.'

'Deteſt cards!' cries Mrs. James. 'How can you be 'ſo ſtupid! I would not live a day without them: 'nay, indeed, I do not believe I ſhould be able to 'exiſt. Is there ſo delightful a ſight in the whole 'world, as the four honours in one's own hand, unleſs 'it be three natural aces at brag! And you really hate 'cards!'

'Upon reflection,' cries Amelia, 'I have ſome-'times had great pleaſure in them---in ſeeing my chil-'dren build houſes with them. My little boy is ſo dex-'trous, that he will ſometimes build up the whole 'pack.'

'Indeed, Booth,' cries Mrs. James, 'this good 'woman of yours is ſtrangely altered ſince I knew her 'firſt; but ſhe will always be a good creature.'

'Upon my word, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you are 'altered too very greatly; but I doubt not to live to 'ſee you alter again, when you come to have as many 'children as I have.'

'Children!' cries Mrs. James; 'you make me 'ſhudder. How can you envy me the only circum-'ſtance which makes matrimony comfortable?'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you injure me: 'for I envy no woman's happineſs in marriage.' At theſe words ſuch looks paſſed between Booth and his wife, as, to a ſenſible by-ſtander, would have made all the airs of Mrs. James appear in the higheſt degree contemptible, and would have rendered herſelf the object of compaſſion. Nor could that lady avoid looking a little ſilly on the occaſion.

Amelia now, at the earneſt deſire of her huſband, accoutred herſelf to attend her friend; but firſt ſhe inſiſted on viſiting her children, to whom ſhe gave ſeveral hearty kiſſes, and then recommending them to the care of Mrs. Atkinſon, ſhe and her huſband accompanied

Mrs. James to the rout; where few of my fine readers will be diſpleaſed to make part of the company.

The two ladies and Booth then entered an apartment beſet with card-tables, like the rooms at Bath and Tunbridge. Mrs. James immediately introduced her friends to Lady Betty; who received them very civilly, and preſently engaged Booth and Mrs. James in a party at whiſt: for, as to Amelia, ſhe ſo much declined playing, that, as the party could be filled without her, ſhe was permitted to ſit by.

And now, who ſhould make his appearance but the noble peer, of whom ſo much honourable mention hath already been made in this hiſtory. He walked directly up to Amelia, and addreſſed her with as perfect a confidence as if he had not been in the leaſt conſcious of having in any manner diſpleaſed her; though the reader will hardly ſuppoſe, that Mrs. Elliſon had kept any thing a ſecret from him.

Amelia was not, however, ſo forgetful. She made him a very diſtant curtſey; would ſcarce vouchſafe an anſwer to any thing he ſaid; and took the firſt opportunity of ſhifting her chair, and retiring from him.

Her behaviour, indeed, was ſuch, that the peer plainly perceived that he ſhould get no advantage by purſuing her any farther at preſent. Inſtead, therefore, of attempting to follow her, he turned on his heel, and addreſſed his diſcourſe to another lady; though he could not avoid often caſting his eyes towards Amelia as long as ſhe remained in the room.

Fortune, which ſeems to have been generally no great friend to Mr. Booth, gave him no extraordinary marks of her favour at play. He loſt two full rubbers, which coſt him five guineas; after which, Amelia, who was uneaſy at his lordſhip's preſence, begged him, in a whiſper, to return home; with which requeſt he directly complied.

Nothing, I think, remarkable happened to Booth, unleſs the renewal of his acquaintance with an officer

whom

whom he had known abroad, and who made one of his party at the whist-table.

The name of this gentleman, with whom the reader will hereafter be better acquainted, was Trent. He had formerly been in the same regiment with Booth, and there was some intimacy between them. Captain Trent expressed great delight in meeting his brother officer, and both mutually promised to visit each other.

The scenes which had passed the preceding night and that morning, had so confused Amelia's thoughts, that, in the hurry in which she was carried off by Mrs. James, she had entirely forgot her appointment with Dr. Harrison. When she was informed, at her return home, that the doctor had been to wait upon her, and had expressed some anger at her being gone out, she became greatly uneasy, and begged of her husband to go to the doctor's lodgings, and make her apology.

But lest the reader should be as angry with the doctor, as he had declared himself with Amelia, we think proper to explain the matter. Nothing then was farther from the doctor's mind than the conception of any anger towards Amelia. On the contrary, when the girl answered him, that her mistress was not at home, the doctor said with great good humour---'How! not at 'home! then tell your mistress she is a giddy vagabond, 'and I will come to see her no more till she sends for me.' This the poor girl, from misunderstanding one word, and half forgetting the rest, had construed into great passion, and several bad words, and a declaration that he would never see Amelia any more.

## CHAP. VIII.

*In which two Strangers make their Appearance.*

BOOTH went to the doctor's lodgings, and found him engaged with his country friend and his son, a young gentleman who was lately in orders; both of whom the doctor had left, to keep his appointment with Amelia.

After what we mentioned at the end of the last chapter, we need take little notice of the apology made by

Booth, or the doctor's reception of it, which was in his peculiar manner. 'Your wife,' said he, 'is a vain 'hussey, to think herself worth my anger; but tell her 'I have the vanity myself to think I cannot be angry 'without a better cause. And yet tell her, I intend 'to punish her for her levity: for, if you go abroad, I 'have determined to take her down with me into the 'country, and make her do penance there till your re-'turn.'

'Dear Sir,' said Booth, 'I know not how to thank 'you, if you are in earnest.'

'I assure you then I am in earnest,' cries the doc-tor; 'but you need not thank me, however, since you 'know not how.'

'But would not that, Sir,' said Booth, 'be shew-'ing a slight to the colonel's invitation? and you know 'I have so many obligations to him.'

'Do not tell me of the colonel,' cries the doctor; 'the church is to be first served. Besides, Sir, I have 'priority of right, even to yourself. You stole my 'little lamb from me; for I was her first love.'

'Well, Sir,' cries Booth, 'if I should be so unhappy 'to leave her to any one, she must herself determine; 'and, I believe, it will not be difficult to guess where 'her choice will fall: for of all men, next to her hus-'band, I believe none can contend with Dr. Harrison 'in her favour.'

'Since you say so,' cries the doctor, 'fetch her hither 'to dinner with us: for I am at least so good a chris-'tian to love those that love me.---I will shew you my 'daughter, my old friend; for I am really proud of 'her---and you may bring my grand-children with 'you, if you please.'

Booth made some compliments; and then went on his errand. As soon as he was gone, the old gentle-man said to the doctor---'Pray, my good friend, what 'daughter is this of yours? I never so much as heard 'that you was married.'

'And what then,' cries the doctor; 'did you ever

'hear

'hear that a pope was married; and yet ſome of them 'have had ſons and daughters, I believe: but, however, 'this young gentleman will abſolve me without oblig-'ing me to penance.'

'I have not yet that power,' anſwered the young 'clergyman; for I am only in deacon's orders.'

'Are you not?' cries the doctor; why, then, I will 'abſolve myſelf. You are to know then, my good 'friend, that this young lady was the daughter of a 'neighbour of mine, who is ſince dead, and whoſe ſins 'I hope are forgiven: for ſhe had too much to anſwer 'for on her child's account. Her father was my inti-'mate acquaintance and friend; a worthier man, in-'deed, I believe, never lived. He died ſuddenly when 'his children were infants; and, perhaps, to the ſud-'denneſs of his death it was owing, that he did not 'recommend any care of them to me. However, I, 'in ſome meaſure, took that charge upon me; and 'particularly of her whom I call my daughter. In-'deed, as ſhe grew up, ſhe diſcovered ſo many good 'qualities, that ſhe wanted not the remembrance of 'her father's merit to recommend her. I do her no 'more than juſtice, when I ſay, ſhe is one of the beſt 'creatures I ever knew. She hath a ſweetneſs of tem-'per, a generoſity of ſpirit, an openneſs of heart; in a 'word, ſhe hath a true chriſtian diſpoſition. I may 'call her an Iſraelite, indeed, in whom there is no 'guile.'

'I wiſh you joy of your daughter,' cries the old gentleman: 'for to a man of your diſpoſition, to find 'out an adequate object of your benevolence, is, I ac-'knowledge, to find a treaſure.'

'It is, indeed, a happineſs,' cries the doctor.

'The greateſt difficulty,' added the gentleman, 'which perſons of your turn of mind meet with, is in 'finding proper objects of their goodneſs: for nothing 'ſure can be more irkſome to a generous mind than to 'diſcover that it hath thrown away all it's good offices 'on a ſoil that bears no other fruit than ingratitude.'

'I remember,' cries the doctor, 'Phocylides ſaith---

'Μὴ κακὸν εὖ ἔρξῃς· σπείρειν ἴσον ἐς ἐνὶ πόντῳ*.

'But he ſpeaks more like a philoſopher than a chriſtian. 'I am more pleaſed with a French writer, one of the 'beſt, indeed, that I ever read; who blames men for 'lamenting the ill return which is ſo often made to 'the beſt offices†. "A true chriſtian can never be "diſappointed, if he doth not receive his reward in "this world: the labourer might as well complain, "that he is not paid his hire in the middle of the "day."

'I own indeed,' ſaid the gentleman, 'if we ſee it 'in that light----------'

'And in what light ſhould we ſee it?' anſwered the doctor. 'Are we like Agrippa, only *almoſt* chriſ-'tians? or, is chriſtianity a matter of bare theory, and 'not a rule for our practice?'

'Practical undoubtedly, undoubtedly practical,' cries the gentleman. 'Your example might, in-'deed, have convinced me long ago, that we ought to 'do good to every one.'

'Pardon me, father,' cries the young divine, 'that 'is rather a heatheniſh than a chriſtian doctrine. Ho-'mer, I remember, introduces in his Iliad, one Axylus, 'of whom he ſays---

‡ 'Φίλος δ' ἦν ἀνθρώποισι·
'Πάντας γὰρ φιλέεσκεν.

'But Plato, who of all the heathens came neareſt 'to the Chriſtian philoſophy, condemned this as im-'pious doctrine; ſo Euſtathius tells us, folio 474.'

'I know he doth,' cries the doctor; 'and ſo Barnes 'tells us, in his note upon the place: but if you re-

* To do a kindneſs to a bad man, is like ſowing your ſeed in the ſea.

† D'Eſprit.

‡ He was a friend to mankind, for he loved them all.

'member

'member the reſt of the quotation, as well as you do 'that from Euſtathius, you might have added the ob- 'ſervation which Mr. Dryden makes in favour of this 'paſſage, that he found not in all the Latin authors ſo 'admirable an inſtance of extenſive humanity. You 'might have likewiſe remembered the noble ſentiment 'with which Mr. Barnes ends his note, the ſenſe of 'which is taken from the fifth chapter of Matthew---

'——— ὃς καὶ φάος ἠελίοιο
'Μίγδ' ἀγαθοῖσι κακοῖσί τ' ἐπ' ἀνδράσιν ἐξανατέλλει.

'It ſeems, therefore, as if this character rather became 'a chriſtian than a heathen; for Homer could not have 'tranſcribed it from any of his deities. Whom is it, 'therefore, we imitate by ſuch extenſive benevolence?'

'What a prodigious memory you have!' cries the old gentleman.---'Indeed, ſon, you muſt not contend 'with the doctor in theſe matters.'

'I ſhall not give my opinion haſtily,' cries the ſon. 'I know again what Mr. Poole, in his annotations, 'ſays on that verſe of St. Matthew: That it is only 'to *heap up coals of fire upon their heads*. How are we 'to underſtand, pray, the text immediately preced- 'ing? *Love your enemies, bleſs them that curſe you, do 'good to them that hate you.*'

'You know, I ſuppoſe, young gentleman,' ſaid the doctor, 'how theſe words are generally underſtood. 'The commentator, you mention, I think, tells us, 'that love is not here to be taken in the ſtrict ſenſe, ſo 'as to ſignify the complacency of the heart; you may 'hate your enemies as God's enemies, and ſeek due 'revenge of them for his honour: and for your own 'ſake too you may ſeek moderate ſatisfaction of them; 'but then, you are to love them with a love conſiſtent 'with theſe things; that is to ſay, in plainer words, 'you are to love them, and hate them, and bleſs and 'curſe, and do them good and miſchief.'

'Excellent! admirable!' ſaid the old gentleman, 'You have a moſt inimitable turn to ridicule.'

'I do

'I do not approve ridicule,' ſaid the ſon, 'on ſuch 'ſubjects.'

'Nor I neither,' cries the doctor. 'I will give you 'my opinion, therefore, very ſeriouſly. The two 'verſes taken together contain a very poſitive precept, 'delivered in the plaineſt words, and yet illuſtrated by 'the cleareſt inſtance, in the conduct of the Supreme 'Being; and laſtly, the practice of this precept is moſt 'nobly enforced by the reward annexed---*that ye may 'be the children*, and ſo forth. No man, who under-'ſtands what it is to love, and to bleſs, and to do 'good, can miſtake the meaning. But if they re-'quired any comment, the Scripture itſelf affords 'enough. *If thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirſt, 'give him drink; not rendering evil for evil, or railing 'for railing, but contrarywiſe, bleſſing.* They do not, 'indeed, want the comments of men who, when they 'cannot bend their minds to the obedience of Scripture, 'are deſirous to wreſt Scripture to a compliance with 'their own inclinations.'

'Moſt nobly and juſtly obſerved,' cries the old gentleman. 'Indeed, my good friend, you have explained 'the text with the utmoſt perſpecuity.'

'But if this be the meaning,' cries the ſon, 'there 'muſt be an end of all law and juſtice; for I do not 'ſee how any man can proſecute his enemy in a court 'of juſtice.'

'Pardon me, Sir,' cries the doctor. 'Indeed, as an 'enemy merely, and from a ſpirit of revenge, he can-'not, and he ought not to proſecute him; but as an 'offender againſt the laws of his country, he may, and 'it is his duty ſo to do: is there any ſpirit of revenge 'in magiſtrates or officers of juſtice, when they puniſh 'criminals? Why do ſuch, ordinarily I mean, con-'cern themſelves in inflicting puniſhments, but be-'cauſe it is their duty? and why may not a private 'man deliver an offender into the hands of juſtice, 'from the ſame laudable motive? Revenge, indeed, 'of all kinds, is ſtrictly prohibited; wherefore, as we

'are

'are not to execute it with our own hands, ſo neither 'are we to make uſe of the law as the inſtrument of 'private malice, and to worry each other with inve-'teracy and rancour. And where is the great diffi-'culty in obeying this wiſe, this generous, this noble 'precept? If revenge be, as a certain divine, not 'greatly to his honour, calls it, the moſt luſcious mor-'ſel the devil ever dropt into the mouth of a ſinner, it 'muſt be allowed at leaſt to coſt us often extremely dear. 'It is a dainty, if it indeed it be one, which we come 'at with great inquietude, with great difficulty, and 'with great danger. However pleaſant it may be to 'the palate, while we are feeding on it, it is ſure to 'leave a bitter reliſh behind it; and ſo far, indeed, it 'may be called a luſcious morſel, that the moſt greedy 'appetites are ſoon glutted, and the moſt eager long-'ing for it is ſoon turned into loathing and repentance. 'I allow there is ſomething tempting in it's outward 'appearance; but it is like the beautiful colour of 'ſome poiſons, from which, however they may attract 'our eyes, a regard to our own welfare commands us 'to abſtain. And this is an abſtinence to which wiſ-'dom alone, without any Divine command, hath been 'often found adequate; with inſtances of which the 'Greek and Latin authors every where abound. May 'not a chriſtian, therefore, be well aſhamed of making 'a ſtumbling block of a precept, which is not only 'conſiſtent with his worldly intereſt, but to which ſo 'noble an incentive is propoſed?'

The old gentleman fell into raptures at this ſpeech; and, after making many compliments to the doctor upon it, he turned to his ſon, and told him, he had an opportunity now of learning more in one day, than he had learned at the univerſity in a twelvemonth.

The ſon replied, that he allowed the doctrine to be extremely good in general, and that he agreed with the greater part; 'But I muſt make a diſtinction,' ſaid he ——However, he was interrupted from his diſtinction

at

at preſent; for now Booth returned with Amelia and the children.

## CHAP. IX.

### *A Scene of modern Wit and Humour.*

IN the afternoon, the old gentleman propoſed a walk to Vauxhall; a place of which, he ſaid, he had heard much, but had never ſeen it.

The doctor readily agreed to his friend's propoſal, and ſoon after ordered two coaches to be ſent for to carry the whole company. But when the ſervant was gone for them, Booth acquainted the doctor, that it was yet too early. 'Is it ſo,' ſaid the doctor: 'why 'then I'll carry you firſt to one of the greateſt and 'higheſt entertainments in the world.'

The children pricked up their ears at this; nor did any of the company gueſs what he meant: and Amelia aſked what entertainment he could carry them to at that time of the day.

'Suppoſe,' ſaid the doctor, 'I ſhould carry you to 'court?'

'At five o'clock in the afternoon!' cries Booth.

'Aye, ſuppoſe I ſhould have intereſt enough to in-'troduce you into the preſence?'

'You are jeſting, dear Sir,' cries Amelia.

'Indeed, I am ſerious,' anſwered the doctor. 'I 'will introduce you into that Preſence, compared to 'whom the greateſt emperor on the earth is many mil-'lions of degrees meaner than the moſt contemptible 'reptile is to him. What entertainment can there be 'to a rational being equal to this? Was not the taſte 'of mankind moſt wretchedly depraved, where would 'the vain man find an honour, or where would the 'lover of pleaſure propoſe ſo adequate an object as Di-'vine worſhip? With what extaſy muſt the contem-'plation of being admitted to ſuch a Preſence fill the 'mind! The pitiful courts of princes are open to 'few, and to thoſe only at particular ſeaſons; but from 'this glorious and gracious Preſence, we are none of 'us, and at no time, excluded.' The

The doctor was proceeding thus, when the ſervant returned, ſaying, the coaches were ready: and the whole company, with the greateſt alacrity, attended the doctor to St. James's church.

When the ſervice was ended, and they were again got into their coaches, Amelia returned the doctor many thanks for the light in which he had placed Divine worſhip; aſſuring him, that ſhe had never before had ſo much tranſport in her devotion as at this time; and ſaying, ſhe believed ſhe ſhould be the better for this notion he had given her, as long as ſhe lived.

The coaches being come to the water-ſide, they all alighted, and getting into one boat, proceeded to Vauxhall.

The extreme beauty and elegance of this place is well known to almoſt every one of my readers: and happy is it for me that it is ſo; ſince, to give an adequate idea of it, would exceed my power of deſcription. To delineate the particular beauties of theſe gardens would, indeed, require as much pains, and as much paper too, as to rehearſe all the good actions of their maſter; whoſe life proves the truth of an obſervation, which I have read in ſome ethic writer, that a truly elegant taſte is generally accompanied with an excellency of heart; or, in other words, that true virtue is, indeed, nothing elſe but true taſte.

Here our company diverted themſelves with walking an hour or two before the muſic began. Of all the ſeven, Booth alone had ever been here before; ſo that, to all the reſt, the place, with it's other charms, had that of novelty. When the muſic played, Amelia, who ſtood next to the doctor, ſaid to him in a whiſper ---'I hope I am not guilty of profaneneſs; but, in 'purſuance of that chearful chain of thoughts with 'which you have inſpired me this afternoon, I was juſt 'now loſt in a reverie, and fancied myſelf in thoſe 'bliſsful manſions which we hope to enjoy hereafter. 'The delicious ſweetneſs of the place, the enchanting 'charms of the muſic, and the ſatisfaction which ap-

'pears

'pears in every one's countenance, carried my ſoul al-
'moſt to heaven in it's ideas. I could not have, in-
'deed, imagined there had been any thing like this in
'the world.'

The doctor ſmiled, and ſaid---'You ſee, dear Ma-
'dam, there may be pleaſures, of which you could
'conceive no idea, till you actually enjoyed them.'

And now the little boy, who had long withſtood the attractions of ſeveral cheeſe-cakes that paſſed to and fro, could contain no longer; but aſked his mother to give him one, ſaying---'I am ſure my ſiſter would be glad
'of another, though ſhe is aſhamed to aſk.' The doctor, overhearing the child, propoſed that they ſhould all retire to ſome place where they might ſit down and refreſh themſelves, which they accordingly did. Amelia now miſſed her huſband; but as ſhe had three men in her company, and one of them was the doctor, ſhe concluded herſelf and her children to be ſafe, and doubted not but that Booth would ſoon find her out.

They now ſat down, and the doctor very gallantly deſired Amelia to call for what ſhe liked. Upon which the children were ſupplied with cakes; and ſome ham and chicken were provided for the reſt of the company. With which, while they were regaling themſelves with the higheſt ſatisfaction, two young fellows walking arm in arm came up, and when they came oppoſite to Amelia, ſtood ſtill, ſtaring Amelia full in the face, and one of them cried aloud to the other---'D---n me, my lord,
'if ſhe is not an angel!' My lord ſtood ſtill, ſtaring likewiſe at her, without ſpeaking a word: when two others of the ſame gang came up, and one of them cried---'Come along, Jack, I have ſeen her before;
'but ſhe is too well manned already. Three are enough
'for one woman, or the devil is in it!'

'D---n me,' ſays he that ſpoke firſt, and whom they called Jack, 'I will have a bruſh at her, if ſhe be-
'longed to the whole convocation.' And ſo ſaying, he went up to the young clergyman, and cried---'Doctor,
'ſit up a little, if you pleaſe, and do not take up more
'room

'room in a bed than belongs to you.' At which words he gave the young man a puſh, and ſeated himſelf down directly over-againſt Amelia; and leaning both his elbows on the table, fixed his eyes on her in a manner with which modeſty can neither look, nor bear to be looked at.

Amelia ſeemed greatly ſhocked at this treatment; upon which the doctor removed her within him, and then facing the gentleman, aſked him what he meant by this rude behaviour. Upon which my lord ſtepped up, and ſaid---'Do not be impertinent, old 'gentleman. Do you think ſuch fellows as you are to 'keep, d---n me! ſuch fine wenches, d---n me! to 'yourſelves, d---n me?'

'No, no,' cries Jack, 'the old gentleman is more 'reaſonable. Here is the fellow that eats up the tithe-'pig. Do not you ſee how his mouth waters at her? 'Where is your ſlabbering bib?' For though the gentleman had rightly gueſſed he was a clergyman, yet he had not any of thoſe inſignia on with which it would have been improper to have appeared there.

'Such boys as you,' cries the young clergyman, 'ought to be well whipped at ſchool, inſtead of being 'ſuffered to become nuiſances in the ſociety.'

'Boys, Sir?' ſays Jack; 'I believe I am as good a 'man as yourſelf, Mr. -----, and as good a ſcholar 'too. *Bos fur ſus quotque ſacerdos.* Tell me what is 'next. D---n me, I'll hold you fifty pounds you do 'not tell me what is next.'

'You have him, Jack, cries my lord. 'It is all 'over with him, d---n me. He cannot ſtrike another 'blow.'

'If I had you in a proper place,' cries the clergyman, 'you ſhould find I would ſtrike a blow, and a 'pretty hard one too.'

'There,' cries my lord, 'there is the meekneſs of 'the clergyman. There ſpoke the wolf in ſheep's 'cloathing. D---n me, how big he looks! You muſt

'be civil to him, faith! or else he will burst with 'pride.'

'Aye, aye,' cries Jack, 'let the clergy alone for 'pride; there's not a lord in the kingdom, now, hath 'half the pride of that fellow.'

'Pray, Sir,' cries the doctor, turning to the other, 'are you a lord?'

'Yes, Mr.------, cries he, 'I have that honour, 'indeed.'

'And I suppose you have pride too,' said the doctor.

'I hope I have, Sir,' answered he, 'at your service.'

'If such a one as you, Sir,' cries the doctor, 'who 'are not only a scandal to the title you bear as a lord, 'but even as a man, can pretend to pride, why will 'you not allow it to a clergyman? I suppose, Sir, by 'your dress, you are in the army; and, by the rib-'band in your hat, you seem to be proud of that too. 'How much greater and more honourable is the service 'in which that gentleman is enlisted than yours! Why, 'then, should you object to the pride of the clergy, 'since the lowest of the function is, in reality, every 'way so much your superior?'

'Tida, tidu, tidum!' cries my lord.

'However, gentlemen,' cries the doctor, 'if you 'have the least pretension to that name, I beg you will 'put an end to your frolic; since you see it gives so 'much uneasiness to the lady. Nay, I entreat you, 'for your own sakes; for here is one coming, who will 'talk to you in a very different style from ours.'

'One coming!' cries my lord; 'what care I who 'is coming?'

'I suppose it is the devil,' cries Jack; 'for here are 'two of his livery servants already.'

'Let the devil come as soon as he will,' cries my lord; 'd---n me if I have not a kiss.'

Amelia now fell a trembling; and her children, perceiving her fright, both hung on her, and began to cry; when Booth and Captain Trent both came up.

Booth,

Booth, seeing his wife disordered, asked eagerly what was the matter. At the same time, the lord and his companion seeing Captain Trent, whom they well knew, said both together---'What! does this company 'belong to you?' When the doctor, with great presence of mind, as he was apprehensive of some fatal consequence if Booth should know what had past, said ---'So, Mr. Booth, I am glad you are returned; your 'poor lady here began to be frighted out of her wits. '---But now you have him again,' said he to Amelia, 'I hope you will be easy.'

Amelia, frighted as she was, presently took the hint, and greatly chid her husband for leaving her. But the little boy was not so quick-sighted, and cried---'Indeed, papa, those naughty men there have frighted 'my mamma out of her wits.'

'How!' cries Booth, a little moved. 'Frightened! 'hath any one frightened you, my dear?'

'No, my love,' answered she, 'nothing. I know 'not what the child means. Every thing is well, now 'I see you safe.'

Trent had been all the while talking aside with the young sparks; and now addressing himself to Booth, said--'Here hath been some little mistake; I believe 'my lord mistook Mrs. Booth for some other lady.'

'It is impossible,' cries my lord, 'to know every 'one. I am sure, if I had known the lady to be a 'woman of fashion, and an acquaintance of Captain 'Trent, I should have said nothing disagreeable to 'her; but, if I have, I ask her pardon, and the com-'pany's.'

'I am in the dark,' cries Booth. 'Pray what is all 'this matter?'

'Nothing of any consequence,' cries the doctor, 'nor worth your enquiring into. You hear it was a 'mistake of the person; and I really believe his lord-'ship, that all proceeded from his not knowing to 'whom the lady belonged.'

'Come, come,' says Trent, 'there is nothing in

'the matter, I assure you. I will tell you the whole 'another time.'

'Very well; since you say so,' cries Booth, 'I am 'contented.' So ended the affair, and the two sparks 'made their congee, and sneaked off.

'Now they are gone,' said the young gentleman, 'I 'must say, I never saw two worse bred jackanapes, 'nor fellows that deserved to be kicked more. If I had 'had them in another place, I would have taught them 'a little more respect to the church.'

'You took rather a better way,' answered the doctor, 'to teach them that respect.'

Booth now desired his friend Trent to sit down with them, and proposed to call for a fresh bottle of wine; but Amelia's spirits were too much disconcerted to give her any prospect of pleasure that evening. She therefore laid hold of the pretence of her children, for whom she said the hour was already too late; with which the doctor agreed. So they paid their reckoning, and departed; leaving to the two rakes the triumph of having totally dissipated the mirth of this little innocent company, who were before enjoying compleat satisfaction.

## CHAP. X.

*A curious Conversation between the Doctor, young Clergyman, and the young Clergyman's Father.*

THE next morning, when the doctor and his two friends were at breakfast, the young clergyman, in whose mind the injurious treatment he had received the evening before was very deeply impressed, renewed the conversation on that subject. 'It is a scandal,' said he, 'to the government, that they do not preserve more re-'spect to the clergy, by punishing all rudeness to them 'with the utmost severity. It was very justly observed 'of you, Sir,' says he to the doctor, 'that the lowest 'clergyman in England is in real dignity superior to 'the highest nobleman. What then can be so shock-'ing, as to see that gown, which ought to entitle us to 'the veneration of all we meet, treated with contempt 'and ridicule? Are we not, in fact, ambassadors from

'Heaven

'Heaven to the world; and do they not, therefore, in 'denying us our due reſpect, deny it in reality to him 'that ſent us?'

'If that be the caſe,' ſays the doctor, 'it behoves 'them to look to themſelves; for he who ſent us, is 'able to exact moſt ſevere vengeance for the ill treat-'ment of his miniſters.'

'Very true, Sir,' cries the young one; 'and I heartily 'hope he will: but thoſe puniſhments are at too great 'a diſtance to infuſe terror into wicked minds. The 'government ought to interfere with it's immediate 'cenſures. Fines and impriſonments, and corporal 'puniſhments, operate more forcibly on the human 'mind, than all the fears of damnation.'

'Do you think ſo?' cries the doctor; 'then I am 'afraid men are very little in earneſt in thoſe fears.'

'Moſt juſtly obſerved,' ſays the old gentleman. 'Indeed I am afraid that is too much the caſe.'

'In that,' ſaid the ſon, 'the government is to blame. 'Are not books of infidelity, treating our holy religion 'as a mere impoſture, nay, ſometimes, as a mere jeſt, 'publiſhed daily, and ſpread abroad amongſt the peo-'ple with perfect impunity?'

'You are certainly in the right,' ſays the doctor, 'there is a moſt blameable remiſſneſs with regard to 'theſe matters: but the whole blame doth not lie there; 'ſome little ſhare of the fault is, I am afraid, to be 'imputed to the clergy themſelves.'

'Indeed, Sir,' cries the young one, 'I did not ex-'pect that charge from a gentleman of your cloth. Do 'the clergy give any encouragement to ſuch books? 'Do they not, on the contrary, cry loudly out againſt 'the ſuffering them? This is the inviduous aſperſion 'of the laity; and I did not expect to hear it confirmed 'by one of our own cloth.'

'Be not too impatient, young gentleman,' ſaid the doctor; 'I do not abſolutely confirm the charge of the 'laity: it is much too general, and too ſevere; but 'even the laity themſelves do not attack them in that

'part to which you have applied your defence. They 'are not ſuppoſed ſuch fools as to attack that religion 'to which they owe their temporal welfare. They 'are not taxed with giving any other ſupport to infi-'delity, than what it draws from the ill examples of 'their lives; I mean, of the lives of ſome of them. 'Here too the laity carry their cenſures too far: for 'there are very few or none of the clergy, whoſe lives, 'if compared with thoſe of the laity, can be called 'profligate; but ſuch, indeed, is the perfect purity of 'our religion, ſuch is the innocence and virtue which 'it exacts, to intitle us to it's glorious rewards, and to 'ſcreen us from it's dreadful puniſhments, that he muſt 'be a very good man indeed who lives up to it. Thus, 'then, theſe perſons argue. This man is educated in 'a perfect knowledge of religion, is learned in it's 'laws, and is by his profeſſion obliged in a manner to 'have them always before his eyes. The rewards 'which it promiſes to the obedience of theſe laws are ſo 'great, and the puniſhments threatened on diſobedience 'ſo dreadful, that it is impoſſible but all men muſt 'fearfully fly from the one, and as eagerly purſue the 'other. If therefore ſuch a perſon lives in direct op-'poſition to, and in a conſtant breach of theſe laws, 'the inference is obvious. There is a pleaſant ſtory in 'Matthew Paris, which I will tell you as well as I 'can remember it. Two young gentlemen, I think 'they were prieſts, agreed together, that whoſoever 'died firſt, ſhould return and acquaint his friend with 'the ſecrets of the other world. One of them died ſoon 'after, and fulfilled his promiſe. The whole relation 'he gave is not very material; but, among other 'things, he produced one of his hands, which Satan 'had made uſe of to write upon, as the moderns do on 'a card, and had ſent his compliments to the prieſts, 'for the number of ſouls which the wicked examples 'of their lives daily ſent to hell. This ſtory is the 'more remarkable, as it was written by a prieſt, and 'a great favourer of his order.'

'Excellent,'

'Excellent,' cried the old gentleman; 'what a memory you have!'

'But, Sir,' cries the young one, 'a clergyman is a man as well as another; and, if such perfect purity be expected---'

'I do not expect it,' cries the doctor; 'and I hope it will not be expected of us. The Scripture itself gives us this hope, where the best of us are said to fall twenty times a day. But sure, we may not allow the practice of any of those grosser crimes which contaminate the whole mind. We may expect an obedience to the ten commandments, and an abstinence from such notorious vices; as, in the first place, avarice, which indeed can hardly subsist without the breach of more commandments than one: indeed, it would be excessive candour to imagine, that a man, who so visibly sets his whole heart not only on this world, but on one of the most worthless things in it, (for so is money, with regard to it's uses) should be at the same time laying up his treasure in heaven. Ambition is a second vice of this sort: we are told we cannot serve God and Mammon. I might have applied this to avarice; but I chose rather to mention it here. When we see a man sneaking about in courts and levees, and doing the dirty work of great men, from the hopes of preferment; can we believe, that a fellow, whom we see to have so many hard task-masters upon earth, ever thinks of his Master which is in heaven? Must he not himself think, if he ever reflects at all, that so glorious a Master will disdain and disown a servant, who is the dutiful tool of a court favourite; and employed either as the pimp of his pleasure, or sometimes perhaps made a dirty channel, to assist in the conveyance of that corruption, which is clogging up and destroying the very vitals of his country?'

'The last vice which I shall mention, is pride. There is not in the universe a more ridiculous, nor a more contemptible animal, than a proud clergyman;

'a turkey-

'a turkey-cock, or a jack-daw, are objects of veneration, when compared with him. I do not mean, by pride, that noble dignity of mind to which goodneſs can only adminiſter an adequate object, which delights in the teſtimony of it's own conſcience, and could not, without the higheſt agonies, bear it's condemnation. By pride, I mean, that ſaucy paſſion, which exults in every little eventual pre-eminence over other men. Such are the ordinary gifts of nature, and the paultry preſents of fortune, wit, knowledge, birth, ſtrength, beauty, riches, titles, and rank. That paſſion which is ever aſpiring, like a ſilly child, to look over the heads of all about them; which, while it ſervilely adheres to the great, flies from the poor, as if afraid of contamination: devouring greedily every murmur of applauſe, and every look of admiration; pleaſed and elated with all kind of reſpect; and hurt and enflamed with the contempt of the loweſt and moſt deſpicable of fools, even with ſuch as treated you laſt night diſreſpectfully at Vauxhall. Can ſuch a mind as this be fixed on things above? Can ſuch a man reflect that he hath the ineffable honour to be employed in the immediate ſervice of his great Creator; or, can he pleaſe himſelf with the heart-warming hope, that his ways are acceptable in the ſight of that glorious, that incomprehenſible Being?'

'Hear child, hear,' cries the old gentleman; 'hear and improve your underſtanding.---Indeed my good friend, no one retires from you without carrying away ſome good inſtructions with him.---Learn of the doctor, Tom, and you will be the better man as long as you live.'

'Undoubtedly, Sir,' anſwered Tom, the doctor hath ſpoken a great deal of excellent truth; and, without a compliment to him, I was always a great admirer of his ſermons, particularly of their oratory. But,

'*Nec tamen hoc tribuens dederim quoque cætera.*

'I cannot agree that a clergyman is obliged to put

'up

'up with an affront any more than another man, and 'more eſpecially when it is paid to the order.'

'I am very ſorry, young gentleman,' cries the doctor, 'that you ſhould be ever liable to be affronted as 'a clergyman; and, I do aſſure you, if I had known 'your diſpoſition formerly, the order ſhould never have 'been affronted through you.'

The old gentleman now began to check his ſon, for his oppoſition to the doctor; when a ſervant delivered the latter a note from Amelia, which he read immediately to himſelf, and it contained the following words---

'MY DEAR SIR,

'SOMETHING hath happened ſince I ſaw you, 'which gives me great uneaſineſs, and I beg the 'favour of ſeeing you as ſoon as poſſible, to adviſe with 'you upon it. I am, your moſt obliged and dutiful 'daughter, AMELIA BOOTH.'

The doctor's anſwer was, that he would wait on the lady directly; and then turning to his friend, he aſked him if he would not take a walk in the Park before dinner. 'I muſt go,' ſays he, 'to the lady who was 'with us laſt night; for I am afraid, by her letter, 'ſome bad accident hath happened to her. Come, 'young gentleman, I ſpoke a little too haſtily to you 'juſt now; but I aſk your pardon. Some allowance 'muſt be made to the warmth of your blood. I hope 'we ſhall in time both think alike.'

The old gentleman made his friend another compliment: and the young one declared, he hoped he ſhould always think, and act too, with the dignity becoming his cloth. After which, the doctor took his leave for a while, and went to Amelia's lodgings.

As ſoon as he was gone, the old gentleman fell very ſeverely on his ſon. 'Tom,' ſays he, 'how can you 'be ſuch a fool, to undo by your perverſeneſs all that 'I have been doing? Why will you not learn to 'ſtudy mankind with the attention which I have em-'ployed to that purpoſe? Do you think, if I had af-

'fronted

'fronted this obſtinate old fellow as you do, I ſhould 'ever have engaged his friendſhip?'

'I cannot help it, Sir,' ſaid Tom; 'I have not 'ſtudied ſix years at the univerſity, to give up my ſen-'timents to every one. It is true, indeed, he put to-'gether a ſet of ſounding words; but, in the main, I 'never heard any one talk more fooliſhly.'

'What of that?' cries the father; 'I never told you 'he was a wiſe man, nor did I ever think him ſo. If 'he had any underſtanding, he would have been a biſhop 'long ago, to my certain knowledge. But, indeed, 'he hath been always a fool in private life; for I queſ-'tion whether he is worth 100l. in the world, more 'than his annual income. He hath given away above 'half his fortune to the Lord knows who. I believe I 'have had above 200l. of him, firſt and laſt; and, 'would you loſe ſuch a milch cow as this for want of a 'few compliments? Indeed, Tom, thou art as great 'a ſimpleton as himſelf. How do you expect to riſe in 'the church, if you cannot temporize, and give into 'the opinion of your ſuperiors?'

'I do not know, Sir,' cries Tom, 'what you mean 'by my ſuperiors. In one ſenſe, I own, a doctor of 'divinity is ſuperior to a batchelor of arts, and ſo far I 'am ready to allow his ſuperiority; but I underſtand 'Greek and Hebrew as well as he, and will maintain 'my opinion againſt him, or any other in the ſchools.'

'Tom,' cries the old gentleman, 'till thou getteſt 'the better of thy conceit, I ſhall never have any hopes 'of thee. If thou art wiſe, thou wilt think every man 'thy ſuperior, of whom thou canſt get any thing; at 'leaſt, thou wilt perſuade him that thou thinkeſt ſo, 'and that is ſufficient. Tom, Tom, thou haſt no 'policy in thee.'

'What have I been learning theſe ſeven years,' an-ſwered he, 'in the univerſity? However, father, I 'can account for your opinion. It is the common 'failing of old men to attribute all wiſdom to them-'ſelves. Neſtor did it long ago; but if you will en-

'quire

'quire my character at college, I fancy you will not 'think I want to go to ſchool again.'

The father and ſon then went to take their walk; during which the former repeated many good leſſons of policy to his ſon, not greatly perhaps to his edification. In truth, if the old gentleman's fondneſs had not in a great meaſure blinded him to the imperfections of his ſon, he would have ſoon perceived that he was ſowing all his inſtructions in a ſoil ſo choaked with ſelf-conceit, that it was utterly impoſſible they ſhould ever bear any fruit.

# BOOK X.

## CHAP. I.

*To which we will prefix no Preface.*

THE doctor found Amelia alone, for Booth was gone to walk with his new revived acquaintance, Captain Trent, who ſeemed ſo pleaſed with the renewal of his intercourſe with his old brother officer, that he had been almoſt continually with him from the time of their meeting at the drum.

Amelia acquainted the doctor with the purport of her meſſage, as follows: 'I aſk your pardon, my dear Sir, 'for troubling you ſo often with my affairs; but I 'know your extreme readineſs, as well as ability, to 'aſſiſt any one with your advice. The fact is, that 'my huſband hath been preſented by Colonel James 'with two tickets for a maſquerade, which is to be in 'a day or two; and he inſiſts ſo ſtrongly on my going 'with him, that I really do not how to refuſe, without 'giving him ſome reaſon; and I am not able to invent 'any other than the true one, which you would not, I 'am ſure, adviſe me to communicate to him. Indeed, 'I had a moſt narrow eſcape the other day; for I was 'almoſt drawn in inadvertently, by a very ſtrange ac-'cident, to acquaint him with the whole matter.' She then related the ſerjeant's dream, with all the conſequences that attended it.

The doctor conſidered a little with himſelf, and then ſaid,

ſaid, 'I am really, child, puzzled as well as you about 'this matter. I would by no means have you go to 'the maſquerade; I do not indeed like the diverſion it-'ſelf, as I have heard it deſcribed to me: not that I 'am ſuch a prude to ſuſpect every woman who goes 'there of any evil intentions; but it is a pleaſure of 'too looſe and diſorderly a kind for the recreation of a 'ſober mind. Indeed, you have a ſtill ſtronger and 'more particular objection. I will try myſelf to reaſon 'him out of it.'

'Indeed, it is impoſſible,' anſwered ſhe; 'and 'therefore I would not ſet you about it. I never ſaw 'him more ſet on any thing. There is a party, as 'they call it, made on the occaſion; and he tells me 'my refuſal will diſappoint all.'

'I really do not know what to adviſe you,' cries the doctor: 'I have told you I do not approve theſe diver-'ſions; but yet, as your huſband is ſo very deſirous, I 'cannot think there will be any harm in going with 'him. However, I will conſider of it, and do all in 'my power for you.'

Here Mrs. Atkinſon came in, and the diſcourſe on this ſubject ceaſed; but ſoon after Amelia renewed it, ſaying, there was no occaſion to keep any thing a ſecret from her friend. They then fell to debating on the ſubject: but could not come to any reſolution. But Mrs. Atkinſon, who was in an unuſual flow of ſpirits, cried out, 'Fear nothing, my dear Amelia; two wo-'men will ſurely be too hard for one man. I think, 'doctor, it exceeds Virgil---

'*Una dolo divûm ſi fœmina victor duorum eſt.*'

'Very well repeated indeed,' cries the doctor. 'Do 'you underſtand all Virgil as well as you ſeem to do 'that line?'

'I hope I do, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'and Horace too; or 'elſe my father threw away his time to very little pur-'poſe in teaching me.'

'I aſk

'I aſk your pardon, Madam,' cries the doctor. 'I own it was an impertinent queſtion.'

'Not at all, Sir,' ſays ſhe; 'and if you are one of 'thoſe who imagine women incapable of learning, I 'ſhall not be offended at it. I know the common 'opinion; but---

'*Interdum vulgus rectum videt; eſt ubi peccat.*'

'If I was to profeſs ſuch an opinion, Madam,' ſaid the doctor, 'Madam Dacier and yourſelf would bear 'teſtimony againſt me. The utmoſt indeed that I 'ſhould venture, would be to queſtion the utility of 'learning in a young lady's education.'

'I own,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'as the world is 'conſtituted, it cannot be as ſerviceable to her fortune, 'as it will be to that of a man; but you will allow, 'doctor, that learning may afford a woman at leaſt a 'reaſonable and an innocent entertainment.'

'But I will ſuppoſe,' cried the doctor, 'it may 'have it's inconveniences. As, for inſtance, if a 'learned lady ſhould meet with an unlearned huſband, 'might ſhe not be apt to deſpiſe him?'

'I think not,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon; 'and if I may 'be allowed the inſtance, I think I have ſhewn, my-'ſelf, that women who have learning themſelves, can 'be contented without that qualification in a man.'

'To be ſure,' cries the doctor, 'there may be other 'qualifications, which may have their weight in the 'balance. But let us take the other ſide of the queſ-'tion, and ſuppoſe the learned of both ſexes to meet in 'the matrimonial union; may it not afford one ex-'cellent ſubject of diſputation, which is the moſt 'learned.'

'Not at all,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon; 'for if they had 'both learning and good ſenſe, they would ſoon ſee on 'which ſide the ſuperiority lay.'

'But if the learned man,' ſaid the doctor, 'ſhould 'be a little unreaſonable in his opinion, are you ſure

'that the learned woman would preſerve her duty to 'her huſband, and ſubmit?'

'But why,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, muſt we neceſ- 'ſarily ſuppoſe that a learned man would be unreaſon- 'able?'

'Nay, Madam,' ſaid the doctor, 'I am not your 'huſband; and you ſhall not hinder me from ſuppoſing 'what I pleaſe. Surely it is not ſuch a paradox, to 'conceive that a man of learning would be unreaſon- 'able. Are there no unreaſonable opinions in very 'learned authors, even among the critics themſelves? 'For inſtance, what can be a more ſtrange, and in- 'deed unreaſonable opinion, than to prefer the Meta- 'morphoſes of Ovid to the Æneid of Virgil.'

'It would be indeed ſo ſtrange,' cries the lady, 'that 'you ſhall not perſuade me it was ever the opinion of 'any man.'

'Perhaps not,' cries the doctor; 'and I believe you 'and I ſhould not differ in our judgments of any perſon 'who maintained ſuch an opinion. What a taſte muſt 'he have!'

'A moſt moſt contemptible one, indeed!' cries Mrs. Atkinſon.

'I am ſatisfied,' cries the doctor. 'And in the 'words of your own Horace, *Verbum non amplius addam.*'

'But how provoking is this!' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'to draw one in, in ſuch a manner. I proteſt, I was 'ſo warm in the defence of my favourite Virgil, that I 'was not aware of your deſign; but all your triumph 'depends on a ſuppoſition that one ſhould be ſo unfor- 'tunate as to meet with the ſillieſt fellow in the 'world.'

'Not in the leaſt,' cries the doctor. 'Doctor Bent- 'ley was not ſuch a perſon; and yet he would have 'quarrelled, I am convinced, with any wife in the 'world, in behalf of one of his corrections. I do not 'ſuppoſe he would have given up his *ingentia fata* to 'an angel.'

'But

'But do you think,' ſaid ſhe, 'if I had loved him, 'I would have contended with him?'

'Perhaps you might ſometimes,' ſaid the doctor, 'be of theſe ſentiments; but you remember your own 'Virgil, *Varium et mutabile ſemper fœmina.*'

'Nay, Amelia,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you are now 'concerned as well as I am; for he hath now abuſed 'the whole ſex, and quoted the ſevereſt thing that ever 'was ſaid againſt us, though I allow it is one of the 'fineſt.'

'With all my heart, my dear,' cries Amelia. 'I 'have the advantage of you, however, for I do not 'underſtand him.'

'Nor doth ſhe underſtand much better than your-'ſelf,' cries the doctor, 'or ſhe would not admire non-'ſenſe, though in Virgil.'

'Pardon me, Sir,' ſaid ſhe.

'And pardon me, Madam,' cries the doctor, with a feigned ſerioufneſs; 'I ſay, a boy in the fourth form 'at Eton would be whipped, or would deſerve to be 'whipped at leaſt, who made the neuter gender agree 'with the feminine. You have heard, however, that 'Virgil left his Æneid incorrect; and, perhaps, had 'he lived to correct it, we ſhould not have ſeen the 'faults we now ſee in it.'

'Why, it is very true as you ſay, doctor,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon; 'there ſeems to be a falſe concord. I 'proteſt I never thought of it before.'

'And yet this is the Virgil,' anſwered the doctor, 'that you are ſo fond of, who hath made you all of the 'neuter gender; or, as we ſay in Engliſh, he hath 'made mere animals of you: for, if we tranſlate it 'thus,

'Woman is a various and changeable animal,

'there will be no fault, I believe, unleſs in point of 'civility to the ladies.'

Mrs. Atkinſon had juſt time to tell the doctor he was a provoking creature, before the arrival of Booth and

his friend put an end to that learned diſcourſe, in which neither of the parties had greatly recommended themſelves to each other, the doctor's opinion of the lady being not at all heightened by her progreſs in the claſſics; and ſhe, on the other hand, having conceived a great diſlike in her heart towards the doctor, which would have raged, perhaps, with no leſs fury from the conſideration that he had been her huſband.

## CHAP. II.

### *What happened at the Maſquerade.*

FROM this time to the day of the maſquerade, nothing happened of conſequence enough to have a place in this hiſtory.

On that day Colonel James came to Booth's about nine in the evening, where he ſtayed for Mrs. James, who did not come till near eleven. The four maſques then ſet out together in ſeveral chairs; and all proceeded to the Hay-market.

When they arrived at the Opera-houſe, the colonel and Mrs. James preſently left them; nor did Booth and his lady remain long together, but were ſoon divided from each other by different maſques.

A domino ſoon accoſted the lady, and had her away to the upper-end of the fartheſt room on the right-hand, where both the maſques ſat down: nor was it long before the domino began to make very fervent love to the ſhe. It would, perhaps, be tedious to the reader to run through the whole proceſs, which was not indeed in the moſt romantic ſtyle. The lover ſeemed to conſider his miſtreſs as a mere woman of this world, and ſeemed rather to apply to her avarice and ambition, than to her ſofter paſſions.

As he was not ſo careful to conceal his true voice as the lady was, ſhe ſoon diſcovered that this lover of her's was no other than her old friend the peer, and preſently a thought ſuggeſted itſelf to her of making an advantage of this accident. She gave him therefore an intimation that ſhe knew him, and expreſſed ſome aſtoniſhment at his having found her out, 'I ſuſpect,' ſays

ſays ſhe, 'my lord, that you have a friend in the wo-
'man where I now lodge, as well as you had in Mrs.
'Elliſon.' My lord proteſted the contrary. To which
'ſhe anſwered, 'Nay, my lord, do not defend her ſo
'earneſtly, till you are ſure I ſhould have been angry
'with her.'

At theſe words, which were accompanied with a very bewitching ſoftneſs, my lord flew into raptures rather too ſtrong for the place he was in. Theſe the lady gently checked, and begged him to take care they were not obſerved; for that her huſband, for aught ſhe knew, was then in the room.

Colonel James came now up, and ſaid---'So Madam,
'I have the good fortune to find you again; I have
'been extremely miſerable ſince I loſt you.' The lady
'anſwered in her maſquerade voice, that ſhe did not
'know him. 'I am Colonel James,' ſaid he, in a
whiſper. 'Indeed, Sir,' anſwered ſhe, 'you are miſ-
'taken; I have no acquaintance with any Colonel
'James.'---'Madam,' anſwered he in a whiſper like-
wiſe, 'I am poſitive I am not miſtaken; you are cer-
'tainly Mrs. Booth.'---'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'you
'are very impertinent, and I beg you will leave me.'
My lord then interpoſed, and ſpeaking in his own voice, aſſured the colonel that the lady was a woman of quality, and that they were engaged in a converſation together; upon which the colonel aſked the lady's pardon; for, as there was nothing remarkable in her dreſs, he really believed he had been miſtaken.'

He then went again hunting through the rooms, and ſoon after found Booth walking without his maſk between two ladies, one of whom was in a blue domino, and the other in the dreſs of a ſhepherdeſs. 'Will,' cries the colonel, 'do you know what is become of our
'wives; for I have ſeen neither of them ſince I have
'been in the room?' Booth anſwered, that he ſuppoſed they were both together, and they ſhould find them both by and by. 'What,' cries the lady in the blue domino, 'are you both come upon duty then with

'your wives?---As for yours, Mr. Alderman,' ſaid ſhe to the colonel, 'I make no queſtion but ſhe is got 'into much better company than her huſband's.'--- 'How can you be ſo cruel, Madam?' ſaid the ſhepherdeſs; 'you will make him beat his wife by and by, 'for he is a military man, I aſſure you.'---'In the 'trained bands, I preſume,' cries the domino, 'for he 'is plainly dated from the city.'---'I own, indeed,' cries the other, 'the gentleman ſmells ſtrongly of 'Thames Street; and, if I may venture to gueſs, of 'the honourable calling of a taylor.'

'Why, what the devil haſt thou picked up here?' cries James.

'Upon my ſoul, I do not know,' anſwered Booth; 'I wiſh you would take one of them at leaſt.'

'What ſay you, Madam?' cries the domino; 'will you go with the colonel? I aſſure you, you 'have miſtaken your man, for he is no leſs a perſon 'than the great Colonel James himſelf.'

'No wonder, then, that Mr. Booth gives him his 'choice of us; it is the proper office of a caterer, in 'which capacity Mr. Booth hath, I am told, the ho-'nour to ſerve the noble colonel.'

'Much good may it do you with your ladies,' ſaid James; 'I will go in purſuit of better game.' At which words he walked off.

'You are a true ſportſman,' cries the ſhepherdeſs; 'for your only pleaſure, I believe, lies in the purſuit.'

'Do you know the gentleman, Madam?' cries the domino.

'Who doth not know him?' anſwered the ſhepherdeſs.

'What is his character?' cries the domino; 'for 'though I have jeſted with him, I only know him by 'ſight.'

'I know nothing very particular in his character,' cries the ſhepherdeſs. 'He gets every handſome wo-'man he can, and ſo they do all.'

'I ſuppoſe then he is not married,' ſaid the domino.

'O yes,

'O yes, and married for love too,' anſwered the other; 'but he hath loved away all his love for her 'long ago, and now, he ſays, ſhe makes as fine an ob-'ject of hatred. I think, if the fellow ever appears to 'have any wit, it is when he abuſes his wife; and 'luckily for him, that is his favourite topic. I do 'not know the poor wretch; but as he deſcribes her, 'it is a miſerable animal.'

'I know her very well,' cries the other, 'and I am 'much miſtaken if ſhe is not even with him: but hang 'him, what is become of Booth?'

At this inſtant a great noiſe aroſe near that part where the two ladies were. This was occaſioned by a large aſſembly of young fellows, whom they call bucks, who were got together, and were enjoying, as the phraſe is, a letter which one of them had found in the room.

Curioſity has it's votaries among all ranks of people: whenever, therefore, an object of this appears, it is as ſure of attracting a crowd in the aſſemblies of the polite, as in thoſe of their inferiors.

When this crowd was gathered together, one of the bucks, at the deſire of his companions, as well as of all preſent, performed the part of a public orator, and read out the following letter, which we ſhall give the reader, together with the comments of the orator himſelf, and of all his audience.

The orator, then, being mounted on a bench, began as follows---

'Here beginneth the third chapter of Saint-----Pox 'on it, Jack, what is the ſaint's name? I have 'forgot.'

'Timothy, you blockhead!' anſwered another; 'Timothy.'

'Well, then,' cries the orator, 'of Saint Timothy.'

"Sir, I am very ſorry to have any occaſion of wri-"ting on the following ſubject, in a country that is "honoured with the name of Chriſtian; much more "am I concerned to addreſs myſelf to a man whoſe

"many

" many advantages, derived both from nature and " fortune, ſhould demand the higheſt return of gratitude " to the great Giver of all thoſe good things. Is not " ſuch a man guilty of the higheſt ingratitude to that " moſt beneficent Being, by a direct and avowed diſ- " obedience of his moſt poſitive laws and commands?

" I need not tell you that adultery is forbid in the " laws of the Decalogue; nor need I, I hope, men- " tion that it is as expreſsly forbid in the New Teſta- " ment."

'You ſee, therefore,' ſaid the orator, 'what the ' law is, and therefore none of you will be able to ' plead ignorance, when you come to the Old Bailey in ' the other world. But here goes again---

" If it had not been ſo expreſsly forbidden in Scrip- " ture, ſtill the law of nature would have yielded light " enough for us to have diſcovered the great horror and " atrociouſneſs of this crime.

" And accordingly we find, that nations, where the " Sun of Righteouſneſs hath yet never ſhined, have " puniſhed the adulterer with the moſt exemplary pains " and penalties; not only the polite heathens, but the " moſt barbarous nations, have concurred in theſe; in " many places the moſt ſevere and ſhameful corporal " puniſhments, and in ſome, and thoſe not a few, death " itſelf hath been inflicted on this crime.

" And ſure in a human ſenſe there is ſcarce any " guilt which deſerves to be more ſeverely puniſhed. " It includes in it almoſt every injury and every miſ- " chief which one man can do to or can bring on ano- " ther. It is robbing him of his property;"--- 'Mind that, ladies,' ſaid the orator; 'you are all ' the property of your huſbands;---" and of that " property which, if he is a good man, he values " above all others. It is poiſoning that fountain " whence he hath a right to derive the ſweeteſt and " moſt innocent pleaſure, the moſt cordial comfort, " the moſt ſolid friendſhip, and moſt faithful aſſiſt- " ance in all his affairs, wants, and diſtreſſes. It

" is

" is the deſtruction of his peace of mind, and even " of his reputation. The ruin of both wife and huſ- " band, and ſometimes of the whole family, is the pro- " bable conſequence of this fatal injury. Domeſtic " happineſs is the end of almoſt all our purſuits, and " the common reward of all our pains. When men " find themſelves for ever barred from this delightful " fruition, they are loſt to all induſtry, and grow care- " leſs of all their wordly affairs. Thus they become " bad ſubjects, bad relations, bad friends, and bad " men. Hatred and revenge are the wretched paſſions " which boil in their minds. Deſpair and madneſs " very commonly enſue, and murder and ſuicide often " cloſe the dreadful ſcene."

' Thus, gentlemen and ladies, you ſee the ſcene is ' cloſed. So here ends the firſt act, and thus begins ' the ſecond---

" I have here attempted to lay before you a picture " of this vice, the horror of which no colours of mine " can exaggerate. But what pencil can delineate the " horrors of that puniſhment which the Scripture de- " nounces againſt it!

" And for what will you ſubject yourſelf to this " puniſhment? or for what reward will you inflict all " this miſery on another? I will add, on your friend! " For the poſſeſſion of a woman: for the pleaſure of a " moment! But if neither virtue nor religion can re- " ſtrain your inordinate appetites, are there not many " women as handſome as your friend's wife, whom, " though not with innocence, you may poſſeſs with " a much leſs degree of guilt? What motive, then, " can thus hurry you on to the deſtruction of yourſelf and " your friend? Doth the peculiar rankneſs of the guilt " add zeſt to the ſin? Doth it enhance the pleaſure as " much as we may be aſſured it will the puniſhment?

" But if you can be ſo loſt to all ſenſe of fear, and of " ſhame, and of goodneſs, as not to be debarred by " the evil which you are to bring on yourſelf, by the " extreme baſeneſs of the action, nor by the ruin in

" which

" which you are to involve others; let me ſtill urge " the difficulty, I may ſay the impoſſibility, of the " ſucceſs. You are attacking a fortreſs on a rock; a " chaſtity ſo ſtrongly defended, as well by a happy " natural diſpoſition of mind, as by the ſtrongeſt prin- " ciples of religion and virtue, implanted by educa- " tion, and nouriſhed and improved by habit, that the " woman muſt be invincible, even without that firm " and conſtant affection of her huſband, which would " guard a much looſer and worſe-diſpoſed heart. " What therefore are you attempting, but to intro- " duce diſtruſt, and perhaps diſunion, between an in- " nocent and a happy couple; in which too you cannot " ſucceed without bringing, I am convinced, certain " deſtruction on your own head?

" Deſiſt, therefore, let me adviſe you, from this " enormous crime; retreat from the vain attempt of " climbing a precipice, which it is impoſſible you " ſhould ever aſcend; where you muſt probably ſoon " fall into utter perdition, and can have no other hope " but of dragging down your beſt friend into perdi- " tion with you.

" I can think of but one argument more, and that, " indeed, a very bad one: you throw away that time " in an impoſſible attempt, which might, in other pla- " ces crown your ſinful endeavours with ſucceſs."

'And ſo ends the diſmal ditty.'

'D---n me,' cries one, 'did ever mortal hear ſuch ' d---n'd ſtuff?'

'Upon my ſoul,' ſaid another, 'I like the laſt argu- ' ment well enough. There is ſome ſenſe in that: for ' d---n me if I had not rather go to Douglaſs at any ' time, than to follow a virtuous b----for a fortnight.'

'Tom,' ſays one of them, 'let us ſet the ditty to ' muſic; let us ſubſcribe to have it ſet by Handel; it ' will make an excellent oratorio.'

'D---n me, Jack,' ſays another, 'we'll have it ſet to ' a pſalm-tune, and we'll ſing it next Sunday at St. ' James's church, and I'll bear a bob, d---n me.'

'Fig

'Fie upon it, gentlemen! fie upon it!' ſaid a friar who came up; 'do you think there is any wit and hu-'mour in this ribaldry? or, if there were, would it 'make any atonement for abuſing religion and virtue?'

'Hey-day!' cries one, 'this is a friar in good earneſt.'

'Whatever I am,' ſaid the friar, 'I hope at leaſt, 'you are not what you appear to be. Heaven forbid, 'for the ſake of our poſterity, that you ſhould be gen-'tlemen.'

'Jack,' cries one, 'let us toſs the friar in a blanket.'

'Me in a blanket!' ſaid the friar: 'by the dignity 'of a man, I will twiſt the neck of every one of you 'as ſure as ever the neck of a dunghill-cock was twiſt-'ed!' At which words he pulled off his maſk, and the tremendous majeſty of Colonel Bath appeared, from which the bucks fled away as faſt as the Trojans heretofore from the face of Achilles. The colonel did not think it worth while to purſue any other of them except him who had the letter in his hand, which the colonel deſired to ſee, and the other delivered, ſaying it was very much at his ſervice.

The colonel, being poſſeſſed of the letter, retired as privately as he could, in order to give it a careful peruſal; for, badly as it had been read by the orator, there were ſome paſſages in it which had pleaſed the colonel; he had juſt gone through it, when Booth paſſed by him, upon which the colonel called to him, and delivering him the letter, bid him put it in his pocket, and read it at his leiſure. He made many encomiums upon it, and told Booth it would be of ſervice to him, and was proper for all young men to read.

Booth had not yet ſeen his wife; but as he concluded ſhe was ſafe with Mrs. James, he was not uneaſy. He had been prevented the ſearching farther after her, by the lady in the blue domino, who had joined him again. Booth had now made theſe diſcoveries: that the lady was pretty well acquainted with him; that ſhe was a woman of faſhion; and that ſhe had a particular

regard

regard for him. But though he was a gay man, he was in reality so fond of his Amelia, that he thought of no other woman; wherefore, though not absolutely a Joseph, as we have already seen, yet could he not be guilty of premeditated inconstancy. He was indeed so very cold and insensible to the hints which were given him, that the lady began to complain of his dullness. When the shepherdess again came up, and heard this accusation against him, she confirmed it, saying---'I 'do assure you, Madam, he is the dullest fellow in the 'world. Indeed, I should almost take you for his 'wife, by finding you a second time with him; for I 'do assure you the gentleman very seldom keeps any 'other company.'---'Are you so well acquainted with 'him, Madam?' said the domino. 'I have had that 'honour longer than your ladyship, I believe,' answered the shepherdess. 'Possibly you may, Madam,' cries the domino; 'but I wish you would not inter-'rupt us at present; for we have some business toge-'ther.'---'I believe, Madam,' answered the shepherd-'ess, 'my business with the gentleman is altogether as 'important as yours; and therefore your ladyship may 'withdraw if you please.'---'My dear ladies,' cries Booth, 'I beg you will not quarrel about me.'---'Not at all,' answered the domino; 'since you are so 'indifferent, I resign my pretensions with all my heart. 'If you had not been the dullest fellow upon earth, I 'am convinced you must have discovered me.' She then went off muttering to herself, that she was satisfied the shepherdess was some wretched creature whom nobody knew.

The shepherdess overheard the sarcasm, and answered it, by asking Booth what contemptible wretch he had picked up. 'Indeed, Madam,' said he, 'you 'know as much of her as I do; she is a masquerade 'acquaintance like yourself.---'Like me!' repeated she. 'Do you think, if this had been our first ac-'quaintance, I should have wasted so much time with 'you as I have? For your part, indeed, I believe a

'woman

'woman will get very little advantage by her having 'been formerly intimate with you.'---'I do not know, 'Madam,' ſaid Booth, 'that I deſerve that character, 'any more than I know the perſon that now gives it 'me.'---'And you have the aſſurance, then,' ſaid ſhe in her own voice, 'to affect not to remember me.'--- 'I think,' cries Booth, 'I have heard that voice be-'fore; but upon my ſoul, I do not recollect it.'--- 'Do you recollect,' ſaid ſhe, 'no woman that you have 'uſed with the higheſt barbarity? I will not ſay 'ingratitude.'---'No, upon my honour!' anſwered Booth. 'Mention not honour,' ſaid ſhe, 'thou 'wretch: for, hardened as thou art, I could ſhew thee 'a face that, in ſpite of thy conſummate impudence, 'would confound thee with ſhame and horror. Do'ſt 'thou not yet know me?'---'I do, Madam, indeed,' anſwered Booth, 'and I confeſs, that of all women in 'the world you have the moſt reaſon for what you 'ſaid.'

Here a long dialogue enſued between the gentleman and the lady, whom, I ſuppoſe, I need not mention to have been Miſs Matthews; but as it conſiſted chiefly of violent upbraidings on her ſide, and excuſes on his, I deſpair of making it entertaining to the reader; and ſhall therefore return to the colonel, who having ſearched all the rooms with the utmoſt diligence, without finding the woman he looked for, began to ſuſpect that he had before fixed on the right perſon, and that Amelia had denied herſelf to him, being pleaſed with her paramour, whom he had diſcovered to be the noble peer.

He reſolved, therefore, as he could have no ſport himſelf, to ſpoil that of others; accordingly, he found out Booth, and aſked him again what was become of both their wives; for that he had ſearched all over the rooms, and could find neither of them.

Booth was now a little alarmed at this account; and parting with Miſs Matthews, went along with the colonel in ſearch of his wife. As for Miſs Matthews, he had at length pacified her with a promiſe to make her a

viſit; which promiſe ſhe extorted from him, ſwearing bitterly, in the moſt ſolemn manner, unleſs he made it to her, ſhe would expoſe both him and herſelf at the maſquerade.

As he knew the violence of the lady's paſſions, and to what heights they were capable of riſing, he was obliged to come into theſe terms; for he had, I am convinced, no fear upon earth equal to that of Amelia's knowing what it was in the power of Miſs Matthews to communicate to her, and which, to conceal from her, he had already undergone ſo much uneaſineſs.

The colonel led Booth to the place where he had ſeen the peer and Amelia (ſuch he was now well convinced ſhe was) ſitting together. Booth no ſooner ſaw her, than he ſaid to the colonel---'Sure that is my wife in 'converſation with that maſque.'---'I took her for 'your lady myſelf,' ſaid the colonel, 'but I found 'I was miſtaken. (Hark ye, that is my Lord-----, 'and I have ſeen that very lady with him all this 'night.)

This converſation paſſed at a little diſtance, and out of the hearing of the ſuppoſed Amelia; when Booth looking ſtedfaſtly at the lady, declared with an oath, that he was poſitive the colonel was in the right. She then beckoned to him with her fan; upon which, he went directly to her; and ſhe aſked him to go home, which he very readily conſented to. The peer then walked off; the colonel went in purſuit of his wife, or of ſome other woman; and Booth and his lady returned in two chairs to their lodgings.

## CHAP. III.

### *Conſequences of the Maſquerade, not uncommon nor ſurprizing.*

THE lady getting firſt out of her chair, ran haſtily up into the nurſery to the children; for ſuch was Amelia's conſtant method at her return home, at whatever hour. Booth then walked into the dining-room; where he had not been long, before Amelia came down to him, and with a moſt chearful countenance, ſaid---

'My

'My dear, I fancy we have neither of us ſupped; ſhall 'I go down and ſee whether there is any cold meat in 'the houſe?'

'For yourſelf, if you pleaſe,' anſwered Booth; 'but 'I ſhall eat nothing.'

'How, my dear,' ſaid Amelia; 'I hope you have 'not loſt your appetite at the maſquerade?' For ſupper was a meal at which he generally eat very heartily.

'I know not well what I have loſt,' ſaid Booth; 'I 'find myſelf diſordered. My head aches. I know not 'what is the matter with me.'

'Indeed, my dear, you frighten me,' ſaid Amelia; 'you look indeed diſordered. I wiſh the maſquerade 'had been far enough, before you had gone thither.'

'Would to Heaven it had!' cries Booth; 'but that 'is over now. But pray, Amelia, anſwer me one 'queſtion: who was that gentleman with you, when I 'came up to you?'

'The gentleman, my dear,' ſaid Amelia; 'what 'gentleman?'

'The gentleman, the nobleman, when I came up: 'ſure I ſpeak plain.' 'Upon my word, my dear, I 'do not underſtand you,' anſwered ſhe; 'I did not 'know one perſon at the maſquerade.'

'How!' ſaid he; 'what, ſpend the whole evening 'with a maſque without knowing him?'

'Why, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'you know we were not 'together.'

'I know we were not,' ſaid he: 'but what is that 'to the purpoſe? ſure you anſwer me ſtrangely. I 'know we were not together; and therefore I aſk you 'whom you were with?'

'Nay, but, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'can I tell people 'in maſks?'

'I ſay again, Madam,' ſaid he, 'would you con-'verſe two hours or more with a maſque whom you did 'not know?'

'Indeed,' child,' ſays ſhe, 'I know nothing of the

'methods of a maſquerade: for I never was at one in 'my life.'

'I wiſh to Heaven you had not been at this,' cries Booth. 'Nay, you will wiſh ſo yourſelf, if you tell 'me truth. What have I ſaid? do I, can I, ſuſpect 'you of not ſpeaking truth? Since you are ignorant 'then, I will inform you; the man you have converſed 'with was no other than Lord -----.'

'And is that the reaſon,' ſaid ſhe, 'you wiſh I had 'not been there?'

'And is not that reaſon,' anſwered he, 'ſufficient? 'Is he not the laſt man upon earth with whom I would 'have you converſe?'

'So you really wiſh then that I had not been at the 'maſquerade?'

'I do,' cried he, 'from my ſoul.'

'So may I ever be able,' cried ſhe, 'to indulge you 'in every wiſh as in this. I was not there.'

'Do not trifle, Amelia,' cried he; 'you would not 'jeſt with me, if you knew the ſituation of my mind.

'Indeed, I do not jeſt with you,' ſaid ſhe. 'Upon 'my honour, I was not there. Forgive me this firſt 'deceit I ever practiſed; and, indeed, it ſhall be the 'laſt, for I have paid ſeverely for this by the uneaſineſs 'it hath given me.' She then revealed to him the whole ſecret, which was thus---

I think it hath been already mentioned in ſome part of this hiſtory, that Amelia and Mrs. Atkinſon were exactly of the ſame make and ſtature, and that there was likewiſe a very near reſemblance between their voices. When Mrs. Atkinſon, therefore, found that Amelia was ſo extremely averſe to the maſquerade, ſhe propoſed to go thither in her ſtead, and to paſs upon Booth for his own wife.

This was afterwards very eaſily executed; for when they left Booth's lodgings, Amelia, who went laſt to her chair, ran back to fetch her maſque, as ſhe pretended, which ſhe had purpoſely left behind. She then whipt off her domino, and threw it over Mrs. Atkinſon,

ſon, who ſtood ready to receive it, and ran immediately down ſtairs, and ſtepping into Amelia's chair, proceeded with the reſt to the maſquerade.

As her ſtature exactly ſuited that of Amelia, ſhe had very little difficulty to carry on the impoſition; for, beſides the natural reſemblance of their voices, and the opportunity of ſpeaking in a feigned one, ſhe had ſcarce an intercourſe of ſix words with Booth during the whole time; for the moment they got into the croud, ſhe took the firſt opportunity of ſlipping from him. And he, as the reader may remember, being ſeized by other women, and concluding his wife to be ſafe with Mrs. James, was very well ſatisfied, till the colonel ſet him upon the ſearch, as we have ſeen before.

Mrs. Atkinſon, the moment ſhe came home, ran up ſtairs to the nurſery, where ſhe found Amelia, and told her in haſte that ſhe might very eaſily carry on the deceit with her huſband; for that ſhe might tell him what ſhe pleaſed to invent, as they had not been a minute together during the whole evening.

Booth was no ſooner ſatisfied that his wife had not been from home that evening, than he fell into raptures with her, gave her a thouſand tender careſſes, blamed his own judgment, acknowledged the goodneſs of her's, and vowed never to oppoſe her will more in any one inſtance during his life.

Mrs. Atkinſon, who was ſtill in the nurſery with her maſquerade dreſs, was then ſummoned down ſtairs; and when Booth ſaw her, and heard her ſpeak in her mimic tone, he declared he was not ſurprized at his having been impoſed upon, for that if they were both in the ſame diſguiſe, he ſhould ſcarce be able to diſcover the difference between them.

They then ſat down to half an hour's chearful converſation: after which, they retired all in the moſt perfect good humour.

## CHAP. IV.

*Consequences of the Masquerade.*

WHEN Booth rose in the morning, he found in his pocket the letter which had been delivered to him by Colonel Bath; which had not chance brought to his remembrance, he might possibly have never recollected.

He had now, however, the curiosity to open the letter, and beginning to read it, the matter of it drew him on, till he perused the whole; for notwithstanding the contempt cast upon it by those learned critics, the bucks, neither the subject, nor the manner in which it was treated, was altogether contemptible.

But there was still another motive which induced Booth to read the whole letter; and this was, that he presently thought he knew the hand. He did, indeed, immediately conclude it was Dr. Harrison's, for the doctor wrote a very remarkable one; and this letter contained all the particulars of the doctor's character.

He had just finished a second reading of this letter, when the doctor himself entered the room. The good man was impatient to know the success of Amelia's stratagem; for he bore towards her all that love which esteem can create in a good mind, without the assistance of those selfish considerations, from which the love of wives and children may be ordinarily deduced. The latter of which, nature, by very subtle and refined reasoning, suggests to us to be part of our dear selves; and the former, as long as they remain the objects of our liking, that same nature is furnished with very plain and fertile arguments to recommend to our affections. But to raise that affection in the human breast which the doctor had for Amelia, nature is forced to use a kind of logic, which is no more understood by a bald man, than Sir Isaac Newton's doctrine of colours is by one born blind. And yet in reality it contains nothing more abstruse than this, that an injury is the object of anger, danger of fear, and praise of vanity: for in the

same

ſame ſimple manner it may be aſſerted, that goodneſs is the object of love.

The doctor enquired immediately for his child, (for ſo he often called Amelia.) Booth anſwered, that he had left her aſleep; for that ſhe had had but a reſtleſs night. 'I hope ſhe is not diſordered by the maſquerade?' cries the doctor. Booth anſwered, he believed ſhe would be very well when ſhe waked. 'I fancy,' ſaid he, 'her gentle ſpirits were a little too much fluttered 'laſt night; that is all.'

'I hope then,' ſaid the doctor, 'you will never more 'inſiſt on her going to ſuch places, but know your own 'happineſs in having a wife that hath the diſcretion to 'avoid thoſe places, which, though perhaps they may 'not be, as ſome repreſent them, ſuch brothels of vice 'and debauchery as would impeach the character of 'every virtuous woman who was ſeen at them; are 'certainly, however, ſcenes of riot, diſorder, and in-'temperance, very improper to be frequented by a 'chaſte and ſober chriſtian matron.'

Booth declared, that he was very ſenſible of his error: and that ſo far from ſoliciting his wife to go to another maſquerade, he did not intend ever to go thither any more himſelf.

The doctor highly approved the reſolution; and then Booth ſaid---'And I thank you, my dear friend, as 'well as my wife's diſcretion, that ſhe was not at the 'maſquerade laſt night.' He then related to the doctor the diſcovery of the plot, and the good man was greatly pleaſed with the ſucceſs of the ſtratagem, and that Booth took it in ſuch good part.

'But, Sir,' ſays Booth, 'I had a letter given me 'by a noble colonel there, which is written in a hand 'ſo very like yours, that I could almoſt ſwear to it. 'Nor is the ſtyle, as far as I can gueſs, unlike your 'own. Here it is, Sir. Do you own the letter, doc-'tor, or do you not?'

The doctor took the letter; and having looked at it a moment,

a moment, said---'And did the colonel himself give
'you this letter?'

'The colonel himself,' answered Booth.

'Why then,' cries the doctor, 'he is surely the most
'impudent fellow that the world ever produced. What,
'did he deliver it with an air of triumph?'

'He delivered it me with air enough,' cries Booth,
'after his own manner, and bid me read for my edifi-
'cation. To say the truth, I am a little surprized
'that he should single me out, of all mankind, to de-
'liver the letter to; I do not think I deserve the cha-
'racter of such a husband. It is well I am not so very
'forward to take an affront as some folks.'

'I am glad to see you are not,' said the doctor;
'and your behaviour in this affair becomes both the
'man of sense and the christian: for it would be surely
'the greatest folly, as well as the most daring impiety,
'to risque your own life for the impertinence of a fool.
'As long as you are assured of the virtue of your own
'wife, it is wisdom in you to despise the efforts of such
'a wretch. Not indeed that your wife accuses him of
'any downright attack, though she had observed
'enough of his behaviour to give offence to her deli-
'cacy.'

'You astonish me, doctor,' said Booth. 'What
'can you mean? My wife dislike his behaviour! hath
'the colonel ever offended her?'

'I do not say he hath ever offended her by any open
'declarations. Nor hath he done any thing which,
'according to the most romantic notion of honour, you
'can or ought to resent; but there is something ex-
'tremely nice in the chastity of a truly virtuous wo-
'man.'

'And hath my wife really complained of any thing
'of that kind in the colonel?'

'Look ye, young gentleman,' cries the doctor, 'I
'will have no quarrelling or challenging; I find I have
'made some mistake, and therefore I insist upon it, by
'all the rights of friendship, that you give me your

'word

'word of honour you will not quarrel with the colonel 'on this account.'

'I do with all my heart,' ſaid Booth; 'for if I did 'not know your character, I ſhould abſolutely think 'you was jeſting with me. I do not think you have 'miſtaken my wife, but I am ſure ſhe hath miſtaken 'the colonel: and hath miſconſtrued ſome overſtrained 'point of gallantry, ſomething of the Quixote kind, 'into a deſign againſt her chaſtity; but I have that 'opinion of the colonel, that I hope you will not be 'offended, when I declare I know not which of you 'two I ſhould be the ſooner jealous of.

'I would by no means have you jealous of any one,' cries the doctor; 'for I think my child's virtue may 'be firmly relied on; but I am convinced ſhe would 'not have ſaid what ſhe did to me, without a cauſe; 'nor ſhould I, without ſuch a conviction, have written 'that letter to the colonel, as I own to you I did. 'However, nothing I ſay hath yet paſt, which, even 'in the opinion of falſe honour, you are at liberty to 'reſent; but as to declining any great intimacy, if 'you will take my advice, I think that would be pru-'dent.'

'You will pardon me, my deareſt friend,' ſaid Booth; 'but I have really ſuch an opinion of the colo-'nel, that I would pawn my life upon his honour; 'and as for women, I do not believe he ever had an at-'tachment to any.'

'Be it ſo,' ſaid the doctor. 'I have only two 'things to inſiſt on. The firſt is, that if ever you 'change your opinion, this letter may not be the ſub-'ject of any quarrelling or fighting; the other is, that 'you never mention a word of this to your wife. By 'the latter I ſhall ſee whether you can keep a ſecret; 'and if it is no otherwiſe material, it will be a whole-'ſome exerciſe to your mind; for the practice of any 'virtue is a kind of mental exerciſe, and ſerves to 'maintain the health and vigour of the ſoul.'

'I faithfully promiſe both,' cries Booth. And now the

the breakfaſt entered the room, as did ſoon after Amelia and Mrs. Atkinſon.

The converſation ran chiefly on the maſquerade; and Mrs. Atkinſon gave an account of ſeveral adventures there; but whether ſhe told the whole truth with regard to herſelf, I will not determine; for certain it is, ſhe never once mentioned the name of the noble peer. Among the reſt, ſhe ſaid there was a young fellow that had preached a ſermon there upon a ſtool, in praiſe of adultery, ſhe believed; for ſhe could not get near enough to hear the particulars.

During that tranſaction, Booth had been engaged with the blue domino in another room, ſo that he knew nothing of it: ſo that what Mrs. Atkinſon had now ſaid, only brought to his mind the doctor's letter to Colonel Bath, for to him he ſuppoſed it was written; and the idea of the colonel being a lover to Amelia, ſtruck him in ſo ridiculous a light, that it threw him into a violent fit of laughter.

The doctor, who, from the natural jealouſy of an author, imputed the agitation of Booth's muſcles to his own ſermon or letter on that ſubject, was a little offended; and ſaid gravely---'I ſhould be glad to know 'the reaſon of this immoderate mirth. Is adultery a 'matter of jeſt in your opinion?'

'Far otherwiſe,' anſwered Booth. 'But how is it 'poſſible to refrain from laughter at the idea of a fellow preaching a ſermon in favour of it at ſuch a 'place!'

'I am very ſorry,' cries the doctor, 'to find the age 'is grown to ſo ſcandalous a degree of licentiouſneſs, 'that we have thrown off not only virtue, but decency. 'How abandoned muſt be the manners of any nation 'where ſuch inſults upon religion and morality can be 'committed with impunity: no man is fonder of true 'wit and humour than myſelf; but to prophane ſacred 'things with jeſt and ſcoffing is a ſure ſign of a weak 'and wicked mind. It is the very vice which Homer 'attacks in the odious character of Therſites. The

'ladies

'ladies muſt excuſe my repeating the paſſage to you, 'as I know you have Greek enough to underſtand it.

'Ὃς ῥ' ἔπεα φρεσὶν ἦσιν ἄκοσμά τε, πολλά τε ἦ δη.
'Μῶψ, ἀτὰρ ὃ κατὰ κόσμον ἐριζέμεναι βασιλεῦσιν
'Ἔμμεναι.*

And immediately adds,

'——αἰσχίστος δὲ ἀνὴρ ὑπὸ Ἴλιον ἦλθε.†

'Horace again deſcribes ſuch a raſcal:

'----------*Solutos*
'*Qui captat riſus hominum famamque dicacis.*‡

'And ſays of him,

'*Hic niger eſt; hunc tu, Romane, caveto.*'‖

'O charming Homer!' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon; 'how 'much above all other writers!'

'I aſk your pardon, Madam,' ſaid the doctor, 'I 'forgot you was a ſcholar; but, indeed, I did not 'know you underſtood Greek as well as Latin.'

'I do not pretend,' ſaid ſhe, 'to be a critic in the 'Greek; but I think I am able to read a little of Ho-'mer, at leaſt with the help of looking now and then 'into the Latin.'

'Pray, Madam,' ſaid the doctor, how do you like 'this paſſage in the ſpeech of Hector to Andromache?---

'——Εἰς οἶκον ἰοῦσα τὰ σαυτῆς ἔργα κόμιζε,

* Thus paraphraſed by Mr. Pope—
'Aw'd by no ſhame, by no reſpect controul'd,
'In ſcandal buſy, in reproaches bold:
'With witty malice ſtudious to defame;
'Scorn all his joy, and laughter all his aim.

† He was the greateſt ſcoundrel in the whole army.

‡ 'Who trivial burſts of laughter ſtrives to raiſe,
'And courts of prating petulance the praiſe.'
FRANCIS.

‖ This man is black; do thou, O Roman, ſhun this man.

'Ιξον

'Ἴςον τ' ηλακάτην τε καὶ ἀμφιπόλοισικέλευε
'Εργον ἐπουϊχεσθαι.*

'Or how do you like the character of Hippodamia; 'who, by being the prettieſt girl, and beſt workwoman 'of her age, got one of the beſt huſbands in all Troy? 'I think, indeed, Homer enumerates her diſcretion 'with her other qualifications; but I do not remember 'he gives us one character of a woman of learning. Do 'not you conceive this to be a great omiſſion in that 'charming poet? However, Juvenal makes you 'amends, for he talks very abundantly of the learning 'of the Roman ladies in his time.'

'You are a provoking man, doctor,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon. 'Where is the harm in a woman's having 'learning as well as a man?'

'Let me aſk you another queſtion,' ſaid the doctor. 'Where is the harm in a man's being a fine performer with a needle as well as a woman? And 'yet, anſwer me honeſtly, would you greatly chuſe to 'marry a man with a thimble upon his finger? 'Would you in earneſt think a needle became the hand 'of your huſband as well as a halbert?'

'As to war, I am with you,' ſaid ſhe. 'Homer 'himſelf, I well remember, makes Hector tell his wife, 'that warlike works---what is the Greek word--- '*Polemy*---ſomething---belonged to men only; and I 'readily agree to it. I hate a maſculine woman, an 'Amazon, as much as you can do: but what is there 'maſculine in learning?'

'Nothing ſo maſculine, take my word for it. As 'for your *Polemy*, I look upon it to be the true cha'racteriſtic of a devil. So Homer every where characterizes Mars.'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries the ſerjeant, 'you had 'better not diſpute with the doctor; for, upon my 'word, he will be too hard for you.'

'Nay, I beg you will not interfere,' cries Mrs. At-

* Go home, and mind your own buſineſs. Follow your ſpinning, and keep your maids to work.

kinſon;

kinſon; 'I am ſure you can be no judge in theſe 'matters.'

At which the doctor and Booth burſt into a loud laugh; and Amelia, though fearful of giving her friend offence, could not forbear a gentle ſmile.

'You may laugh, gentlemen, if you pleaſe,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon; 'but, I thank Heaven, I have mar-'ried a man who is not jealous of my underſtanding. 'I ſhould have been the moſt miſerable woman upon 'earth with a ſtarched pedant, who was poſſeſſed of 'that nonſenſical opinion, that the difference of ſexes 'cauſes any difference in the mind. Why do not you 'honeſtly avow the Turkiſh notion, that women have 'no ſouls; for you ſay the ſame thing in effect?'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries the ſerjeant, greatly concerned to ſee his wife ſo angry, 'you have miſtaken 'the doctor.'

'I beg, my dear,' cries ſhe, 'you will ſay nothing 'upon theſe ſubjects. I hope you, at leaſt, do not de-'ſpiſe my underſtanding.'

'I aſſure you, I do not,' ſaid the ſerjeant; 'and I 'hope you will never deſpiſe mine; for a man may 'have ſome underſtanding, I hope, without learning.'

Mrs. Atkinſon reddened extremely at theſe words; and the doctor, fearing he had gone too far, began to ſoften matters, in which Amelia aſſiſted him. By theſe means, the ſtorm riſing in Mrs. Atkinſon before was in ſome meaſure laid, at leaſt ſuſpended from burſting at preſent; but it fell afterwards upon the poor ſerjeant's head in a torrent: who had learned, perhaps, one maxim from his trade, that a cannon-ball always doth miſchief in proportion to the reſiſtance it meets with; and that nothing ſo effectually deadens it's force as a wool-pack. The ſerjeant therefore bore all with patience; and the idea of a wool-pack, perhaps, bringing that of a feather-bed into his head, he at laſt not only quieted his wife; but ſhe cried out with great ſincerity---'Well, my dear, I will ſay one thing for you, 'that I believe, from my ſoul, though you have no

'learning, you have the beſt underſtanding of any man 'upon earth; and I muſt own I think the latter far 'more profitable of the two.'

Far different was the idea ſhe entertained of the doctor; whom, from this day, ſhe conſidered as a conceited pedant; nor could all Amelia's endeavours ever alter her ſentiments.

The doctor now took his leave of Booth and his wife for a week; he intending to ſet out within an hour or two with his old friend, with whom our readers were a little acquainted at the latter end of the ninth book, and of whom, perhaps, they did not then conceive the moſt favourable opinion.

Nay, I am aware that the eſteem which ſome readers before had for the doctor, may here be leſſened; ſince he may appear to have been too eaſy a dupe to the groſs flattery of the old gentleman. If there be any ſuch critics, we are heartily ſorry as well for them as for the doctor; but it is our buſineſs to diſcharge the part of a faithful hiſtorian, and to deſcribe human nature as it is, not as we would wiſh it to be.

## CHAP. V.

### *In which Colonel Bath appears in great Glory.*

THAT afternoon, as Booth was walking in the Park, he met with Colonel Bath, who preſently aſked him for the letter which he had given him the night before; upon which Booth immediately returned it.

'Do not you think,' cries Bath, 'it is writ with 'great dignity of expreſſion, and emphaſis of---of--- 'of judgment?'

'I am ſurprized, though,' cries Booth, 'that any 'one ſhould write ſuch a letter to you, colonel.'

'To me!' ſaid Bath. 'What do you mean, Sir? 'I hope you do not imagine any man durſt write ſuch 'a letter to me? D---n me, if I knew a man who 'thought me capable of debauching my friend's wife, 'I would---d---n me.'

'I believe, indeed, Sir,' cries Booth, 'that no man 'living

'living dares put his name to such a letter: but you 'see it is anonymous.'

'I do not know what you mean by *ominous*,' cries the colonel; 'but, blast my reputation, if I had re-'ceived such a letter, if I would not have searched the 'world to have found the writer. D---n me, I would 'have gone to the East Indies to have pulled off his 'nose.'

'He would, indeed, have deserved it,' cries Booth. 'But, pray, Sir, how came you by it?'

'I took it,' says the colonel, 'from a set of idle 'young rascals, one of whom was reading it out aloud 'upon a stool, while the rest were attempting to make 'a jest, not only of the letter, but of all decency, vir-'tue, and religion. A set of fellows that you must 'have seen or heard of about town, that, that are, 'd---n me, a disgrace to the dignity of manhood; 'puppies that mistake noise and impudence, rudeness, 'and prophaneness, for wit. If the drummers of my 'company had not more understanding than twenty 'such fellows, I would have them both whipped out 'of the regiment.'

'So then you do not know the person to whom it 'was writ?' saith Booth.

'Lieutenant,' cries the colonel, 'your question de-'serves no answer. I ought to take time to consider 'whether I ought not to resent the supposition. Do 'you think, Sir, I am acquainted with a rascal?'

'I do not suppose, colonel,' cries Booth, 'that 'you would willingly cultivate an intimacy with such 'a person; but a man must have good luck, who hath 'any acquaintance, if there are not some rascals among 'them.'

'I am not offended with you, child,' says the colo-nel. 'I know you did not intend to offend me.'

'No man, I believe, dares intend it,' saith Booth.

'I believe so too,' said the colonel; d---n me, I 'know it. But you know, child, how tender I am 'on this subject. If I had been ever married myself,

'I ſhould have cleft the man's ſkull who had dared to 'look wantonly at my wife.'

'It is certainly the moſt cruel of all injuries,' ſaith Booth. 'How finely doth Shakeſpeare expreſs it in his 'Othello!

'But there, where I had treaſured up my ſoul.'

'That Shakeſpeare,' cries the colonel, 'was a fine 'fellow. He was a very pretty poet, indeed. Was 'it not Shakeſpeare that wrote the play about Hotſpur? 'You muſt remember theſe lines: I got them almoſt 'by heart at the play-houſe; for I never miſſed that 'play whenever it was acted, if I was in town.

'By Heav'n it was an eaſy leap,
'To pluck bright honour into the full moon.
'Or dive into the bottomleſs deep.'

'And---and---faith, I have almoſt forgot them; but I 'know it is ſomething about ſaving your honour from 'drowning. O it is very fine! I ſay, d---n me, the 'man that writ theſe lines was the greateſt poet the 'world ever produced. There is dignity of expreſſion, 'and emphaſis of thinking, d---n me.'

Booth aſſented to the colonel's criticiſm, and then cried---'I wiſh, colonel, you would be ſo kind to give 'me that letter.' The colonel anſwered, if he had any particular uſe for it, he would give it to him with all his heart, and preſently delivered it; and ſoon afterward they parted.

Several paſſages now ſtruck all at once upon Booth's mind, which gave him great uneaſineſs. He became confident now that he had miſtaken one colonel for another; and though he could not account for the letter's getting into thoſe hands from whom Bath had taken it, (indeed James had dropt it out of his pocket) yet a thouſand circumſtances left him no room to doubt the identity of the perſon; who was a man much more liable to raiſe the ſuſpicion of a huſband than honeſt Bath, who would at any time have rather fought with a man than lain with a woman.

The whole behaviour of Amelia now ruſhed upon his

his memory. Her reſolution not to take up her reſidence at the colonel's houſe, her backwardneſs even to dine there, her unwillingneſs to go to the maſquerade, many of her unguarded expreſſions, and ſome where ſhe had been more guarded, all joined together to raiſe ſuch an idea in Mr. Booth, that he had almoſt taken a reſolution to go and cut the colonel to pieces in his own houſe. Cooler thoughts, however, ſuggeſted themſelves to him in time. He recollected the promiſe he had ſo ſolemnly made to the doctor. He conſidered, moreover, that he was yet in the dark as to the extent of the colonel's guilt. Having nothing, therefore, to fear from it, he contented himſelf to poſtpone a reſentment, which he nevertheleſs reſolved to take of the colonel hereafter, if he found he was in any degree a delinquent.

The firſt ſtep he determined to take, was, on the firſt opportunity, to relate to Colonel James the means by which he became poſſeſſed of the letter, and to read it to him. On which occaſion, he thought, he ſhould eaſily diſcern, by the behaviour of the colonel, whether he had been ſuſpected, either by Amelia or the doctor, without a cauſe: but as for his wife, he fully reſolved not to reveal the ſecret to her till the doctor's return.

While Booth was deeply engaged by himſelf in theſe meditations, Captain Trent came up to him, and familiarly ſlapped him on the ſhoulder.

They were ſoon joined by a third gentleman, and preſently afterwards by a fourth, both acquaintances of Mr. Trent; and all having walked twice the length of the Mall together, it being now paſt nine in the evening, Trent propoſed going to the tavern: to which the ſtrangers immediately conſented; and Booth himſelf, after ſome reſiſtance, was at length perſuaded to comply.

To the King's Arms then they went, where the bottle went very briſkly round till after eleven; at which time Trent propoſed a game at cards: to which propoſal likewiſe Booth's conſent was obtained, though not without much difficulty; for though he had naturally ſome in-

clination to gaming, and had formerly a little indulged it, yet he had entirely left it off for many years.

Booth and his friend were partners, and had at first some success; but Fortune, according to her usual conduct, soon shifted about, and persecuted Booth with such malice, that in about two hours he was stripped of all the gold in his pocket, which amounted to twelve guineas, being more than half the cash which he was at that time worth.

How easy it is for a man, who is at all tainted with the itch of gaming, to leave off play in such a situation, especially when he is likewise heated with liquor, I leave to the gamesters to determine. Certain it is, that Booth had no inclination to desist; but, on the contrary, was so eagerly bent upon playing on, that he called his friend out of the room, and asked him for ten pieces, which he promised punctually to pay the next morning.

Trent chid him for using so much formality on the occasion, 'You know,' said he, 'dear Booth, you 'may have what money you please of me. Here is a 'twenty pound note at your service, and if you want 'five times the sum, it is at your service. We will 'never let these fellows go away with our money in 'this manner; for we have so much the advantage, 'that if the knowing ones were here, they would lay 'odds on our side.'

But if this was really Mr. Trent's opinion, he was very much mistaken; for the two other honourable gentlemen were not only great masters of the game, and somewhat soberer than poor Booth, having with all the art in their power evaded the bottle; but they had moreover another small advantage over their adversaries, both of them, by means of some certain private signs previously agreed upon between them, being always acquainted with the principal cards in each other's hands. It cannot be wondered, therefore, that Fortune was on their side; for however she may be reported to favour fools,

fools, she never, I believe, shews them any countenance when they engage in play with knaves.

The more Booth lost, the deeper he made his bets; the consequence of which was, that about two in the morning, besides the loss of his own money, he was fifty pounds indebted to Trent. A sum, indeed, which he would not have borrowed, had not the other, like a very generous friend, pushed it upon him.

Trent's pockets became at last dry, by means of these loans. His own loss indeed was trifling; for the stakes of the games were no higher than crowns; and betting (as it is called) was that to which Booth owed his ruin. The gentlemen, therefore, pretty well knowing Booth's circumstances, and being kindly unwilling to win more of a man than he was worth, declined playing any longer, nor did Booth once ask them to persist; for he was ashamed of the debt which he had already contracted to Trent, and very far from desiring to increase it.

The company then separated. The two victors and Trent went off in their chairs to their several houses near Grosvenor Square; and poor Booth, in a melancholy mood, walked home to his lodgings. He was, indeed, in such a fit of despair, that it more than once came into his head to put an end to his miserable being.

But, before we introduce him to Amelia, we must do her the justice to relate the manner in which she spent this unhappy evening. It was about seven when Booth left her to walk in the Park: from this time, till past eight, she was employed with her children, in playing with them, in giving them their supper, and in putting them to bed.

When these offices were performed, she employed herself another hour in cooking up a little supper for her husband, this being, as we have already observed, his favourite meal, as indeed it was her's; and, in a most pleasant and delightful manner, they generally passed their time at this season, though their fare was very seldom of the sumptuous kind.

It

It now grew dark, and her haſhed mutton was ready for the table; but no Booth appeared. Having waited therefore for him a full hour, ſhe gave him over for that evening; nor was ſhe much alarmed at his abſence, as ſhe knew he was, in a night or two, to be at the tavern with ſome brother officers: ſhe concluded therefore that they had met in the Park, and had agreed to ſpend this evening together.

At ten then ſhe ſat down to ſupper by herſelf; for Mrs. Atkinſon was then abroad. And here we cannot help relating a little incident, however trivial it may appear to ſome. Having ſat ſome time alone reflecting on their diſtreſſed ſituation, her ſpirits grew very low; and ſhe was once or twice going to ring the bell, to ſend her maid for half a pint of white-wine; but checked her inclination, in order to ſave the little ſum of ſix-pence; which ſhe did the more reſolutely, as ſhe had before refuſed to gratify her children with tarts for their ſupper, from the ſaid motive. And this ſelf-denial ſhe was very probably practiſing to ſave ſix-pence; while her huſband was paying a debt of ſeveral guineas, incurred by the ace of trumps being in the hands of his adverſary.

Inſtead, therefore, of this cordial, ſhe took up one of the excellent Farquhar's comedies, and read it half through, when the clock ſtriking twelve, ſhe retired to bed, leaving the maid to ſit up for her maſter. She would, indeed, have much more willingly ſat up herſelf; but the delicacy of her own mind aſſured her, that Booth would not thank her for the compliment. This is, indeed, a method which ſome wives take of upbraiding their huſbands for ſtaying abroad till too late an hour, and of engaging them through tenderneſs and good-nature, never to enjoy the company of their friends too long, when they muſt do this at the expence of their wives reſt.

To bed then ſhe went, but not to ſleep. Thrice, indeed, ſhe told the diſmal clock, and as often heard the more diſmal watchmen, till her miſerable huſband found

found his way home, and ſtole ſilently, like a thief, to bed to her; at which time pretending then firſt to wake, ſhe threw her ſnowy arms around him; though, perhaps, the more witty property of ſnow, according to Addiſon, that is to ſay, it's coldneſs, rather belonged to the poor captain.

## CHAP. VI.

*Read, Gameſter, and obſerve.*

BOOTH could not ſo well diſguiſe the agitations of his mind from Amelia, but that ſhe perceived ſufficient ſymptoms to aſſure her that ſome misfortune had befallen him. This made her in her turn ſo uneaſy, that Booth took notice of it, and after breakfaſt ſaid---'Sure, my dear Emily, ſomething hath fallen out to 'vex you.'

Amelia, looking tenderly at him, anſwered---'Indeed, my dear, you are in the right; I am indeed, 'extremely vexed.'---'For Heaven's ſake,' ſaid he, 'what is it?' 'Nay, my love,' cries ſhe, 'that you 'muſt anſwer yourſelf. Whatever it is that hath 'given you all that diſturbance that you in vain endea-'vour to conceal from me, this it is which cauſes all 'my affliction.'

'You gueſs truly, my ſweet,' replied Booth; 'I am 'indeed afflicted, and I will not, nay, I cannot, conceal 'the truth from you; I have undone myſelf, Amelia.'

'What have you done, child?' ſaid ſhe, in ſome conſternation; 'pray, tell me.'

'I have loſt my money at play,' anſwered he.

'Pugh!' ſaid ſhe, recovering herſelf; 'what ſigni-'fies the trifle you had in your pocket? Reſolve never 'to play again, and let it give you no farther vexation; 'I warrant you, we will contrive ſome method to re-'pair ſuch a loſs.'

'Thou heavenly angel! thou comforter of my ſoul!' cries Booth, tenderly embracing her. Then ſtarting a little from her arms, and looking with eager fondneſs in her eyes, he ſaid---'Let me ſurvey thee; art thou 'really human, or art thou not rather an angel in a hu-

'man

'man form? O, no!' cries he, flying again into her arms, 'thou art my deareſt woman, my beſt, my be-'loved wife!'

Amelia having returned all his careſſes with equal kindneſs, told him ſhe had near eleven guineas in her purſe, and aſked how much ſhe ſhould fetch him. 'I 'would not adviſe you, Billy, to carry too much in 'your pocket, for fear it ſhould be a temptation to 'you to return to gaming, in order to retrieve your 'paſt loſſes. Let me beg you, on all accounts, never 'to think more, if poſſible, on the trifle you have loſt, 'any more than if you had never poſſeſſed it.'

Booth promiſed her faithfully he never would, and refuſed to take any of the money. He then heſitated a moment, and cried---'You ſay, my dear, you have 'eleven guineas; you have a diamond-ring likewiſe, 'which was your grandmother's, I believe that is 'worth twenty pounds; and your own and the child's 'watch are worth as much more.'

'I believe they would ſell for as much,' cried Amelia; 'for a pawnbroker of Mrs. Atkinſon's acquaint-'ance offered to lend me thirty five pounds upon them, 'when you was in your laſt diſtreſs. But why are you 'computing their value now?'

'I was only conſidering,' anſwered he, 'how much 'we could raiſe in any caſe of exigency.'

'I have computed it myſelf,' ſaid ſhe; 'and I be-'lieve all we have in the world, beſides our bare neceſ-'ſary apparel, would produce about fifty pounds: and 'ſuppoſe, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'while we have that lit-'tle ſum we ſhould think of employing it ſome way 'or other to procure ſome ſmall ſubſiſtence for our-'ſelves and our family. As for your dependance on 'the colonel's friendſhip, it is all vain I am afraid, 'and fallacious. Nor do I ſee any hopes you have, 'from any other quarter, of providing for yourſelf 'again in the army. And though the ſum which is 'now in our power is very ſmall, yet we may poſſibly 'contrive with it to put ourſelves into ſome mean way

'of

'of livelihood. I have a heart, my Billy, which is ca-
'pable of undergoing any thing for your ſake; and I
'hope my hands are as able to work as thoſe which have
'been more inured to it. But think, my dear, think
'what muſt be our wretched condition, when the very
'little we now have, is all mouldered away, as it will
'ſoon be in this town.'

When poor Booth heard this, and reflected that the time which Amelia foreſaw was already arrived, (for that he had already loſt every farthing they were worth) it touched him to the quick; he turned pale, gnaſhed his teeth, and cried out---'Damnation! this is too much to bear!'

Amelia was thrown into the utmoſt conſternation by this behaviour; and, with great terror in her countenance, cried out---'Good heavens! my dear love,
'what is the reaſon of this agony?'

'Aſk me no queſtions,' cried he, unleſs you would
'drive me to madneſs.'

'My Billy, my love,' ſaid ſhe, 'what can be the
'meaning of this? I beg you will deal openly with
'me, and tell me all your griefs.'

'Have you dealt fairly with me, Amelia?' ſaid he.

'Yes, ſurely,' ſaid ſhe; 'Heaven is my witneſs
'how fairly!'

'Nay, do not call Heaven,' cried he, 'to witneſs a
'falſhood. You have not dealt openly with me,
'Amelia. You have concealed ſecrets from me; ſe-
'crets which I ought to have known, and which if I
'had known, it had been better for us both.'

'You aſtoniſh me as much as you ſhock me,' cried ſhe. 'What falſhood, what treachery, have I been
'guilty of?'

'You tell me,' ſaid he, 'that I can have no reli-
'ance on James; why did you not tell me ſo before?'

'I call Heaven again,' ſaid ſhe, 'to witneſs; nay,
'I appeal to yourſelf for the truth of it; I have often
'told you ſo. I have told you I diſlike the man, not-
'withſtanding the many favours he hath done you. I

'deſired

'desired you not to have too absolute a reliance on 'him. I own, I had once an extreme good opinion 'of him; but I changed it, and I acquainted you 'that I had so.----

'But not,' cries he, 'with the reasons why you 'had changed it.'

'I was really afraid, my dear,' said she, 'of going 'too far. I knew the obligations you had to him; 'and if I suspected that he acted rather from vanity 'than true friendship-----'

'Vanity!' cries he: 'take care, Amelia; you 'know his motive to be much worse than vanity. A 'motive, which, if he had piled obligations on me till 'they had reached the skies, would tumble all down to 'hell. It is in vain no conceal it longer---I know all '---your confident hath told me all.'

'Nay then,' cries she, 'on my knees I entreat you 'to be pacified, and hear me out. It was, my dear, 'for you, my dread of your jealous honour, and the 'fatal consequences.'

'Is not Amelia, then,' cried he, 'equally jealous 'of my honour! Would she, from a weak tenderness 'of my person, go privately about to betray, to under-'mine, the most invaluable treasure of my soul? 'Would she have me pointed at as the credulous dupe, 'the easy fool, the tame, the kind cuckold, of a rascal 'with whom I conversed as a friend?'

'Indeed, you injure me,' said Amelia. 'Heaven 'forbid I should have the trial; but, I think, I could 'sacrifice all I hold most dear, to preserve your honour. 'I think, I have shewn I can. But I will-----when 'you are cool, I will satisfy you I have done nothing 'you ought to blame,'

'I am cool, then,' cries he; 'I will with the great-'est coolness hear you. But do not think, Amelia, I 'have the least jealousy, the least suspicion, the least 'doubt of your honour. It is your want of confidence 'in me alone which I blame.'

'When

'When you are calm,' said she, 'I will speak, and 'not before.'

He assured her he was calm; and then she said--- 'You have justified my conduct by your present pas- 'sion, in concealing from you my suspicions, for they 'were no more; nay, it is possible they were unjust: for 'since the doctor, in betraying the secret to you, hath 'so falsified my opinion of him, why may I not be as 'well deceived in my opinion of the colonel, since it 'was only formed on some particulars in his behaviour 'which I disliked? for, upon my honour, he never 'spoke a word to me, nor hath been ever guilty of any 'direct action which I could blame.' She then went on, and related most of the circumstances which she had mentioned to the doctor, omitting one or two of the strongest, and giving such a turn to the rest, that if Booth had not had some of Othello's blood in him, his wife would have almost appeared a prude in his eyes. Even he, however, was pretty well pacified by this narrative, and said he was glad to find a possibility of the colonel's innocence; but that he greatly commended the prudence of his wife, and only wished she would for the future make him her only confident.

Amelia, upon that, expressed some bitterness against the doctor for breaking his trust; when Booth, in his excuse, related all the circumstances of the letter, and plainly convinced her that the secret had dropped by mere accident from the mouth of the doctor.

Thus the husband and wife became again reconciled; and poor Amelia generously forgave a passion, of which the sagacious reader is better acquainted with the real cause, than was that unhappy lady.

## CHAP. VII.

*In which Booth receives a Visit from Captain Trent.*

WHEN Booth grew perfectly cool, and began to reflect that he had broken his word to the doctor, in having made the discovery to his wife, which we have seen in the last chapter, that thought gave him great uneasiness; and now to comfort him, Captain

Trent came to make him a visit. This was, indeed, almost the last man in the world whose company he wished for; for he was the only man he was ashamed to see, for a reason well known to gamesters, among whom, the most dishonourable of all things, is not to pay a debt contracted at the gaming-table, the next day, or the next time at least that you see the party.

Booth made no doubt but that Trent was come on purpose to receive this debt; the latter had been, therefore, scarce a minute in the room, before Booth began in an aukward manner, to apologize; but Trent immediately stopped his mouth, and said---'I do not want 'the money, Mr. Booth, and you may pay it me 'whenever you are able; and if you are never able, I 'assure you, I will never ask you for it.'

This generosity raised such a tempest of gratitude in Booth, (if I may be allowed the expression) that the tears burst from his eyes, and it was some time before he could find any utterance for those sentiments with which his mind overflowed; but when he began to express his thankfulness, Trent immediately stopped him, and gave a sudden turn to their discourse.

Mrs. Trent had been to visit Mrs. Booth on the masquerade evening, which visit Mrs. Booth had not yet returned. Indeed, this was only the second day since she had received it. Trent therefore now told his friend, that he should take it extremely kind, if he and his lady would wave all ceremony, and sup at their house the next evening. Booth hesitated a moment; but presently said---'I am pretty certain my wife is 'not engaged, and I will undertake for her. I am sure 'she will not refuse any thing Mr. Trent can ask.' And soon after Trent took Booth with him to walk in the Park.

There were few greater lovers of the bottle than Trent; he soon proposed, therefore, to adjourn to the King's Arms Tavern, where Booth, though much against his inclination, accompanied him. But Trent was very importunate, and Booth did not think himself

ſelf at liberty to refuſe ſuch a requeſt to a man from whom he had ſo lately received ſuch obligations.

When they came to the tavern, however, Booth recollected the omiſſion he had been guilty of the night before. He wrote a ſhort note, therefore, to his wife, acquainting her, that he ſhould not come home to ſupper; but comforted her with a faithful promiſe that he would on no account engage himſelf in gaming.

The firſt bottle paſſed in ordinary converſation; but, when they had tapped the ſecond, Booth, on ſome hints which Trent gave him, very fairly laid open to him his whole circumſtances, and declared he almoſt deſpaired of mending them. 'My chief relief,' ſaid he, 'was in 'the intereſt of Colonel James; but I have given up 'thoſe hopes.'

'And very wiſely too,' ſaid Trent. 'I ſay nothing 'of the colonel's good-will. Very likely he may be 'your ſincere friend; but I do not believe he hath the 'intereſt he pretends to. He hath had too many fa'vours in his own family, to aſk any more yet awhile. 'But I am miſtaken if you have not a much more pow'erful friend than the colonel; one who is both able 'and willing to ſerve you. I dined at his table within 'theſe two days; and I never heard kinder nor warmer 'expreſſions from the mouth of man, than he made uſe 'of towards you. I make no doubt you know whom 'I mean.'

'Upon my honour I do not,' anſwered Booth; 'nor 'did I gueſs that I had ſuch a friend in the world as 'you mention.'

'I am glad, then,' cries Trent, 'that I have the 'pleaſure of informing you of it.' He then named the noble peer, who hath been already ſo often mentioned in this hiſtory.

Booth turned pale, and ſtarted at his name. 'I for'give you, my dear Trent,' cries Booth, 'for men'tioning his name to me, as you are a ſtranger to what 'hath paſſed between us.'

'Nay, I know nothing that hath paſſed between

'you,' answered Trent. 'I am sure, if there is any 'quarrel between you of two days standing, all is for-'given on his part.'

'D---n his forgiveness!' said Booth. 'Perhaps I 'ought to blush at what I have forgiven.'

'You surprize me,' cries Trent. 'Pray, what 'can be the matter?'

'Indeed, my dear Trent,' cries Booth very gravely, 'he would have injured me in the tenderest part. I 'know not how to tell it you; but he would have dis-'honoured me with my wife.'

'Sure you are not in earnest,' answered Trent; 'but, if you are, you will pardon me for thinking that 'impossible.'

'Indeed,' cries Booth, 'I have so good an opinion 'of my wife, as to believe it impossible for him to suc-'ceed; but that he should intend me the favour, you 'will not, I believe, think an impossibility.'

'Faith! not in the least,' said Trent. 'Mrs. 'Booth is a very fine woman; and if I had the honour 'to be her husband, I should not be angry with any 'man for liking her.'

'But you would be angry,' said Booth, 'with a 'man who would make use of stratagems and contri-'vances to seduce her virtue; especially if he did this 'under the colour of entertaining the highest friendship 'for yourself.'

'Not at all,' cries Trent. 'It is human nature.'

'Perhaps it is,' cries Booth; 'but it is human na-'ture depraved, stripped of it's worth, and loveliness, 'and dignity, and degraded down to a level with the 'vilest brutes.'

'Look ye, Booth,' cries Trent, 'I would not be 'misunderstood. I think, when I am talking to you, 'I talk to a man of sense, and to an inhabitant of this 'country; not to one who dwells in a land of saints. 'If you have really such an opinion as you express of 'this noble lord, you have the finest opportunity of 'making a compleat fool and bubble of him that any

'man

'man can desire, and of making your own fortune at 'the same time. I do not say that your suspicions are 'groundless; for, of all men upon earth, I know my 'lord is the greatest bubble to women, though I be-'lieve he hath had very few. And this I am confident 'of, that he hath not the least jealousy of these suspi-'cions. Now, therefore, if you will act the part of a 'wise man, I will undertake that you shall make your 'fortune, without the least injury to the chastity of 'Mrs. Booth.'

'I do not understand you, Sir,' said Booth.

'Nay,' cries Trent, 'if you will not understand 'me, I have done. I meant only your service; and I 'thought I had known you better.'

Booth begged him to explain himself. 'If you can,' said he, 'shew me any way to improve such circum-'stances as I have opened to you, you may depend up-'on it I shall readily embrace it, and own my obliga-'tions to you.'

'That is spoken like a man,' cries Trent. 'Why, 'what is it more than this! Carry your suspicions in 'your own bosom. Let Mrs. Booth, in whose virtue 'I am sure you may be justly confident, go to the public 'places; there let her treat my lord with common civi-'lity only; I am sure he will bite. And thus, with-'out suffering him to gain his purpose, you will gain 'yours. I know several who have succeeded with 'him in this manner.'

'I am very sorry, Sir,' cries Booth, 'that you are 'acquainted with any such rascals. I do assure you, 'rather than I would act such a part, I would submit 'to the hardest sentence that Fortune could pronounce 'against me.'

'Do as you please, Sir,' said Trent; 'I have only 'ventured to advise you as a friend. But do you not 'think your nicety is a little over-scrupulous?'

'You will excuse me, Sir,' said Booth; 'but I 'think no man can be too scrupulous in points which 'concern his honour.'

'I know many men of very nice honour,' answered Trent, 'who have gone much farther; and no man, I 'am sure, had ever a better excuse for it than yourself. 'You will forgive me, Booth, since what I speak pro- 'ceeds from my love to you, nay, indeed, by men- 'tioning your affairs to me. which I am heartily sorry 'for, you have given me a right to speak. You know 'best what friends you have to depend upon; but, if 'you have no other pretensions than your merit, I can 'assure you you would fail, if it was possible you could 'have ten times more merit than you have. And if 'you love your wife, as I am convinced you do, what 'must be your condition in seeing her want the neces- 'saries of life?'

'I know my condition is very hard,' cries Booth; 'but I have one comfort in it, which I will never part 'with, and that is innocence. As to the mere neces- 'saries of life, however, it is pretty difficult to deprive 'us of them; this I am sure of, no one can want them 'long.'

'Upon my word, Sir,' cries Trent, 'I did not 'know you had been so great a philosopher. But, be- 'lieve me, these matters look much less terrible at a 'distance, than when they are actually present. You 'will then find, I am afraid, that honour hath no 'more skill in cookery, than Shakespear tells us it hath 'in surgery. D---n me, if I do not wish his lordship 'loved my wife as well as he doth yours! I promise 'you I would trust her virtue; and if he should get the 'better of it, I should have people of fashion enough to 'keep me in countenance.'

Their second bottle being now almost out, Booth, without making any answer, called for a bill. Trent pressed very much the drinking of another bottle; but Booth absolutely refused: and presently afterwards they parted, not extremely well satisfied with each other. They appeared, indeed, one to the other, in disadvantageous lights of a very different kind. Trent concluded Booth to be a very silly fellow; and Booth began to

suspect

ſuſpect that Trent was very little better than a ſcoundrel.

## CHAP. VIII.

*Contains a Letter, and other Matters.*

WE will now return to Amelia; to whom, immediately upon her huſband's departure to walk with Mr. Trent, a porter brought the following letter; which ſhe immediately opened and read---

'MADAM,

'THE quick diſpatch which I have given to your firſt commands, will, I hope, aſſure you of the 'diligence with which I ſhall always obey every com- 'mand that you are pleaſed to honour me with. I 'have, indeed, in this trifling affair, acted as if my 'life itſelf had been at ſtake; nay, I know not but it 'may be ſo: for this inſignificant matter, you was 'pleaſed to tell me, would oblige the charming perſon 'in whoſe power is not only my happineſs, but, as I 'am well perſuaded, my life too. Let me reap there- 'fore ſome little advantage in your eyes, as you have in 'mine, from this trifling occaſion: for if any thing 'could add to the charms of which you are miſtreſs, it 'would be perhaps that amiable zeal with which you 'maintain the cauſe of your friend. I hope, indeed, 'ſhe will be my friend and advocate with the moſt 'lovely of her ſex; as I think ſhe hath reaſon, and as 'you was pleaſed to inſinuate ſhe had been. Let me 'beſeech you, Madam, let not that dear heart, whoſe 'tenderneſs is ſo inclined to compaſſionate the miſeries 'of others, be hardened only againſt the ſufferings 'which itſelf occaſions. Let not that man alone have 'reaſon to think you cruel, who, of all others, would 'do the moſt to procure your kindneſs. How often 'have I lived over in my reflections, in my dreams, 'thoſe two ſhort minutes we were together? But, 'alas! how faint are theſe mimicries of the imagina- 'tion! What would I not give to purchaſe the reality 'of ſuch another bleſſing! This, Madam, is in 'your power to beſtow on the man who hath no wiſh,

'no

'no will, no fortune, no heart, no life, but what 'are at your diſpoſal. Grant me only the favour to be 'at Lady-----'s aſſembly. You can have nothing to 'fear from indulging me with a moment's ſight, a 'moment's converſation; I will aſk no more. I know 'your delicacy, and had rather die than offend it. 'Could I have ſeen you ſometimes, I believe the fear 'of offending you would have kept my love for ever 'buried in my own boſom; but to be totally excluded 'even from the ſight of what my ſoul doats on, is what 'I cannot bear. It is that alone which hath extorted 'the fatal ſecret from me. Let that obtain your for-'giveneſs for me. I need not ſign this letter, otherwiſe 'than with that impreſſion of my heart which I hope 'it bears; and, to conclude it in any form, no lan-'guage hath words of devotion ſtrong enough to tell 'you with what truth, what anguiſh, what zeal, what 'adoration, I love you.'

Amelia had juſt ſtrength to hold out to the end, when her trembling grew ſo violent, that ſhe dropped the letter, and had probably dropped herſelf, had not Mrs. Atkinſon come timely in to ſupport her.

'Good heavens!' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'What is 'the matter with you, Madam?'

'I know not what is the matter,' cries Amelia; 'but I have received a letter at laſt from that infamous 'colonel.'

'You will take my opinion again then, I hope, 'Madam,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon. 'But do not be ſo 'affected; the letter cannot eat you, or run away with 'you. Here it lies, I ſee; will you give me leave to 'read it?'

'Read it with all my heart,' cries Amelia, 'and 'give me your advice how to act; for I am almoſt diſ-'tracted.'

'Hey-day!' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'here is a piece of 'parchment too; what is that?' In truth, this parchment had dropped from the letter when Amelia firſt opened it; but her attention was ſo fixed by the

contents

contents of the letter itſelf, that ſhe had never read the other. Mrs. Atkinſon had now opened the parchment firſt; and, after a moment's peruſal, the fire flaſhed from her eyes; and the blood flufhed into her cheeks, and ſhe cried out in a rapture---'It is a commiſſion for 'my huſband; upon my ſoul, it is a commiſſion for 'my huſband!' and at the ſame time began to jump about the room, in a kind of frantic fit of joy.

'What can be the meaning of all this?' cries Amelia, under the higheſt degree of aſtoniſhment.

'Do not I tell you, my dear Madam,' cries ſhe, 'that it is a commiſſion for my huſband; and can you 'wonder at my being overjoyed at what I know will 'make him ſo happy? And now it is all out. The 'letter is not from the colonel, but from that noble 'lord of whom I have told you ſo much. But indeed, 'Madam, I have ſome pardons to aſk of you. How-'ever, I know your goodneſs, and I will tell you all.'

'You are to know, then, Madam, that I had not 'been in the opera-houſe ſix minutes, before a maſque 'came up, and taking me by the hand, led me aſide. 'I gave the maſque my hand; and ſeeing a lady at 'that time lay hold on Captain Booth, I took that 'opportunity of ſlipping away from him: for though 'by the ſqueaking voice, and by attempting to mimic 'yours, I had pretty well diſguiſed my own, I was 'ſtill afraid, if I had much converſation with your 'huſband, he would diſcover me. I walked therefore 'away with this maſque to the upper end of the far-'theſt room, where we ſat down in a corner together. 'He preſently diſcovered to me, that he took me for 'you; and I ſoon after found out who he was: in-'deed, ſo far from attempting to diſguiſe himſelf, he 'ſpoke in his own voice, and in his own perſon. He 'now began to make violent love to me; but it was 'rather in the ſtyle of a great man of the preſent age, 'than of an Arcadian ſwain. In ſhort, he laid his 'whole fortune at my feet, and bade me make what-'ever terms I pleaſed, either for myſelf or for others.

'By

'By others, I ſuppoſe, he meant your huſband. 'This, however, put a thought into my head, of 'turning the preſent occaſion into advantage. I told 'him, there were two kinds of perſons, the fallaciouſ-'neſs of whoſe promiſes had become proverbial in the 'world: theſe were lovers, and great men. What re-'liance then could I have on the promiſe of one, who 'united in himſelf both thoſe characters! That I had 'ſeen a melancholy inſtance, in a very worthy woman 'of my acquaintance, (meaning myſelf, Madam) of 'his want of generoſity. I ſaid, I knew the obliga-'tions that he had to this woman, and the injuries he 'had done her: all which I was convinced ſhe forgave; 'for that ſhe had ſaid the handſomeſt things in the 'world of him to me. He anſwered, that he thought 'he had not been deficient in generoſity to this lady '(for I explained to him whom I meant;) but that in-'deed, if ſhe had ſpoke well of him to me, (meaning 'yourſelf, Madam) he would not fail to reward her 'for ſuch an obligation. I then told him ſhe had mar-'ried a very deſerving man, who had ſerved long in 'the army abroad as a private man, and who was a 'ſerjeant in the guards; that I knew it was ſo very 'eaſy for him to get him a commiſſion, that I ſhould not 'think he had any honour or goodneſs in the world, if 'he neglected it. I declared this ſtep muſt be a pre-'liminary to any good opinion he muſt ever hope for of 'mine. I then profeſſed the greateſt friendſhip to that 'lady, (in which I am convinced you will think me 'ſerious) and aſſured him he would give me one of the 'higheſt pleaſures, in letting me be the inſtrument of 'doing her ſuch a ſervice. He promiſed me in a mo-'ment to do what you ſee, Madam, he hath ſince done. 'And to you I ſhall always think myſelf indebted 'for it.'

'I know not how you are indebted to me,' cries Amelia. 'Indeed, I am very glad of any good for-'tune that can attend poor Atkinſon; but I wiſh it 'had been obtained ſome other way. Good Heavens!

'what

'what muſt be the conſequence of this? What muſt 'this lord think of me, for liſtening to the mention of 'love; nay, for making any terms with him? for 'what muſt he ſuppoſe thoſe terms mean? Indeed, 'Mrs. Atkinſon, you carried it a great deal too far. 'No wonder he had the aſſurance to write to me in the 'manner he hath done. It is too plain what he con-'ceives of me, and who knows what he may ſay to 'others! You may have blown up my reputation by 'your behaviour.'

'How is that poſſible?' anſwered Mrs. Atkinſon. 'Is it not in my power to clear up all matters? If 'you will but give me leave to make an appointment 'in your name, I will meet him myſelf, and declare 'the whole ſecret to him.'

'I will conſent to no ſuch appointment,' cries Amelia. 'I am heartily ſorry I ever conſented to 'practiſe any deceit. I plainly ſee the truth of what 'Dr. Harriſon hath often told me, that if one ſteps 'ever ſo little out of the ways of virtue and innocence, 'we know not how we may ſlide; for all the ways of 'vice are a ſlippery deſcent.'

'That ſentiment,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'is much 'older than Dr. Harriſon. *Omne vitium in proclivi 'eſt.*'

'However new or old it is, I find it is true,' cries Amelia. 'But pray tell me all, though I tremble to 'hear it.'

'Indeed, my dear friend,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you are terrified at nothing. Indeed, indeed, you 'are too great a prude.'

'I do not know what you mean by prudery,' anſwered Amelia. 'I ſhall never be aſhamed of the 'ſtricteſt regard to decency, to reputation, and to that 'honour in which the deareſt of all human creatures 'hath his ſhare. But pray give me the letter: there is 'an expreſſion in it which alarmed me when I read it. 'Pray what doth he mean by his two ſhort minutes,

'and

'and by purchaſing the reality of ſuch another bleſ-
'ſing?'

'Indeed, I know not what he means by two mi-
'nutes,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'unleſs he calls two
'hours ſo; for we were not together much leſs. And
'as for any bleſſing he had, I am a ſtranger to it.
'Sure, I hope you have a better opinion of me, than
'to think I granted him the laſt favour!'

'I do not know what favours you granted him,
'Madam,' anſwered Amelia peeviſhly; 'but I am
'ſorry you granted him any in my name.'

'Upon my word,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you uſe
'me unkindly; and it is an uſage I did not expect at
'your hands: nor do I know that I have deſerved it.
'I am ſure I went to the maſquerade with no other
'view than to oblige you; nor did I ſay or do any
'thing there which any woman, who is not the moſt
'confounded prude upon earth, would have ſtarted at
'on a much leſs occaſion than what induced me.
'Well, I declare upon my ſoul then, that, if I was a
'man, rather than be married to a woman who makes
'ſuch a fuſs with her virtue, I would wiſh my wife
'was without ſuch a troubleſome companion.'

'Very poſſibly, Madam, theſe may be your ſenti-
'ments,' cries Amelia; 'and I hope they are the ſenti-
'ments of your huſband.'

'I deſire, Madam,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you
'would not reflect on my huſband. He is a worthy
'man, and as brave a man as yours; yes, Madam,
'and he is now as much a captain.'

She ſpoke theſe words with ſo loud a voice, that Atkinſon, who was accidentally going up ſtairs, heard them; and being ſurprized at the angry tone of his wife's voice, he entered the room, and with a look of much aſtoniſhment begged to know what was the matter.

'The matter, my dear,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'is,
'that I have got a commiſſion for you, and your good
'old friend here is angry with me for getting it.'

'I have

'I have not ſpirits enough,' cries Amelia, 'to anſwer you as you deſerve; and, if I had, you are below my anger.'

'I do not know, Mrs. Booth,' anſwered the other, 'whence this great ſuperiority over me is derived; but, if your virtue gives it you, I would have you to know, Madam, that I deſpiſe a prude, as much as you can do a -----'

'Though you have ſeveral times,' cries Amelia, 'inſulted me with that word, I ſcorn to give you any ill-language in return. If you deſerve any bad appellation, you know it, without my telling it you.'

Poor Atkinſon, who was more frightened than he had ever been in his life, did all he could to procure peace. He fell upon his knees to his wife, and begged her to compoſe herſelf: for, indeed, ſhe ſeemed to be in a moſt furious rage.

While he was in this poſture, Booth, who had knocked ſo gently at the door, for fear of diſturbing his wife, that he had not been heard in the tempeſt, came in the room. The moment Amelia ſaw him, the tears, which had been gathering for ſome time, burſt in a torrent from her eyes; which, however, ſhe endeavoured to conceal with her handkerchief. The entry of Booth turned all in an inſtant into a ſilent picture; in which, the firſt figure which ſtruck the eyes of the captain, was the ſerjeant on his knees to his wife.

Booth immediately cried---'What is the meaning of this?' but received no anſwer. He then caſt his eyes towards Amelia; and plainly diſcerning her condition, he ran to her, and in a very tender phraſe begged to know what was the matter. To which ſhe anſwered---'Nothing, my dear; nothing, my dear; nothing of any conſequence.' He replied, that he would know; and then turned to Atkinſon, and aſked the ſame queſtion.

Atkinſon anſwered---'Upon my honour, Sir, I

'know nothing of it. Something hath paſſed between 'Madam and my wife; but what it is, I know no more 'than your honour.'

'Your wife,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon, 'hath uſed me 'cruelly ill, Mr. Booth. If you muſt be ſatisfied, 'that is the whole matter.'

Booth rapped out a great oath, and cried---'It is 'impoſſible; my wife is not capable of uſing any one ill.'

Amelia then caſt herſelf upon her knees to her huſband, and cried---'For Heaven's ſake, do not throw 'yourſelf into a paſſion! Some few words have paſſed; 'perhaps I may be in the wrong.'

'Damnation ſeize me, if I think ſo!' cries Booth. 'And I wiſh whoever hath drawn theſe tears from your 'eyes, may pay it with as many drops of their heart's 'blood.'

'You ſee, Madam,' cries Mrs. Atkinſon, 'you 'have your bully to take your part; ſo, I ſuppoſe, 'you will uſe your triumph.'

Amelia made no anſwer; but ſtill kept hold of Booth; who, in a violent rage, cried out---'My Ame-'lia triumph over ſuch a wretch as thee! What can 'lead thy inſolence to ſuch preſumption!---Serjeant, I 'deſire you will take that monſter out of the room, or 'I cannot anſwer for myſelf.'

The ſerjeant was beginning to beg his wife to retire, (for he perceived very plainly, that ſhe had, as the phraſe is, taken a ſip too much that evening) when, with a rage little ſhort of madneſs, ſhe cried out---'And do you tamely ſee me inſulted in ſuch a manner, 'now that you are a gentleman and upon a footing 'with him?'

'It is lucky for us all, perhaps,' anſwered Booth, 'that he is not my equal.'

'You lye, ſirrah,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon; 'he is 'every way your equal; he is as good a gentleman as 'yourſelf, and as much an officer. No, I retract what 'I ſay; he hath not the ſpirit of a gentleman, nor of a

'man

'man neither, or he would not bear to ſee his wife in-'ſulted.'

'Let me beg of you, my dear,' cries the ſerjeant, 'to go with me and compoſe yourſelf.'

'Go with thee, thou wretch,' cries ſhe, looking with the utmoſt diſdain upon him; 'no, nor ever ſpeak to 'thee more.' At which words ſhe burſt out of the room: and the ſerjeant, without ſaying a word, followed her.

A very tender and pathetic ſcene now paſſed between Booth and his wife; in which, when ſhe was a little compoſed, ſhe related to him the whole ſtory. For beſides that it was not poſſible for her otherwiſe to account for the quarrel which he had ſeen, Booth was now poſſeſſed of the letter that lay on the floor.

Amelia having emptied her mind to her huſband, and obtained his faithful promiſe that he would not reſent the affair to my lord, was pretty well compoſed, and began to relent a little towards Mrs. Atkinſon; but Booth was ſo highly incenſed with her, that he declared he would leave her houſe the next morning; which they both accordingly did, and immediately accommodated themſelves with convenient apartments within a few doors of their friend the doctor.

## CHAP. IX.

*Containing ſome Things worthy Obſervation.*

NOTWITHSTANDING the exchange of his lodgings, Booth did not forget to ſend an excuſe to Mr. Trent, of whoſe converſation he had taken a full ſurfeit the preceding evening.

That day, in his walks, Booth met with an old brother officer, who had ſerved with him at Gibraltar, and was on half-pay as well as himſelf. He had not, indeed, had the fortune of being broke with his regiment, as was Booth; but had gone out, as they call it, on half-pay as a lieutenant, a rank to which he had riſen in five and thirty years.

This honeſt gentleman, after ſome diſcourſe with Booth, deſired him to lend him half a crown; which he aſſured him he would faithfully pay the next day,

when he was to receive ſome money for his ſiſter. This ſiſter was the widow of an officer that had been killed in the ſea-ſervice; and ſhe and her brother lived together, on their joint ſtock, out of which, they maintained likewiſe an old mother, and two of the ſiſter's children, the eldeſt of which was about nine years old. 'You 'muſt know,' ſaid the old lieutenant, 'I have been 'diſappointed this morning by an old ſcoundrel, who 'wanted fifteen per cent. for advancing my ſiſter's 'penſion; but I have now got an honeſt fellow, who 'hath promiſed it to me to-morrow at ten per cent.'

'And enough too of all conſcience,' cries Booth.

'Why, indeed, I think ſo too,' anſwered the other, 'conſidering it is ſure to be paid one time or other. 'To ſay the truth, it is a little hard the government 'doth not pay thoſe penſions better; for my ſiſter's 'hath been due almoſt theſe two years: that is my 'way of thinking.'

Booth anſwered, he was aſhamed to refuſe him ſuch a ſum; 'But, upon my ſoul,' ſaid he, 'I have not a 'ſingle halfpenny in my pocket; for I am in a worſe 'condition, if poſſible, than yourſelf; for I have loſt 'all my money, and what is worſe, I owe Mr. Trent, 'whom you remember at Gibraltar, fifty pounds.

'Remember him! yes, d---n him, I remember him 'very well,' cries the old gentleman, 'though he will 'not remember me. He is grown ſo great now, that 'he will not ſpeak to his old acquaintance; and yet I 'ſhould be aſhamed of myſelf to be great in ſuch a 'manner.'

'What manner do you mean?' cries Booth a little eagerly.

'Why, pimping,' anſwered the other. 'He is 'pimp in ordinary to my Lord -----, who keeps his 'family; or how the devil he lives elſe I do not know, 'for his place is not worth three hundred pounds a 'year, and he and his wife ſpend a thouſand at leaſt, 'But ſhe keeps an aſſembly, which I believe if you 'was to call a bawdy-houſe, you would not miſname

'it.

'it. But, d---n me, if I had not rather be an honeſt 'man, and walk on foot, with holes in my ſhoes, as 'I do now, or go without a dinner, as I and all my 'family will to-day, than ride in a chariot, and feaſt 'by ſuch means. I am honeſt Bob Bound, and al-'ways will be; that is my way of thinking: and there 'is no man ſhall call me otherwiſe; for if he doth, I 'will knock him down for a lying raſcal: that is my 'way of thinking.'

'And a very good way of thinking too,' cries Booth. 'However, you ſhall not want a dinner to-'day; for if you will go home with me, I will lend 'you a crown with all my heart.'

'Look'e,' ſaid the old man, 'if it be any wiſe in-'convenient to you, I will not have it; for I will never 'rob another man of his dinner, to eat myſelf: that is 'my way of thinking.'

'Pooh,' ſaid Booth, 'never mention ſuch a trifle 'twice between you and me. Beſides, you ſay you 'can pay it to me to-morrow; and I promiſe you that 'will be the ſame thing.'

They then walked together to Booth's lodgings, where Booth, from Amelia's pocket, gave his friend double the little ſum he had aſked. Upon which the old gentleman ſhook him heartily by the hand, and repeating his intention of paying him the next day, made the beſt of his way to a butcher's, whence he carried off a leg of mutton to a family that had lately kept Lent without any religious merit.

When he was gone, Amelia aſked her huſband who that old gentleman was. Booth anſwered, he was one of the ſcandals of his country. That the Duke of Marlborough had about thirty years before made him an enſign from a private man, for very particular merit; and that he had not long ſince gone out of the army with a broken heart upon having ſeveral boys put over his head. He then gave her an account of his family, which he had heard from the old gentleman in their way

to his houſe, and with which we have already in a conciſe manner acquainted the reader.

'Good heavens!' cries Amelia, 'what are our 'great men made of! are they in reality a diſtinct ſpe-'cies from the reſt of mankind? are they born without 'hearts?'

'One would indeed ſometimes,' cries Booth, 'be 'inclined to think ſo. In truth, they have no perfect 'ideas of thoſe common diſtreſſes of mankind which are 'far removed from their own ſphere. Compaſſion, if 'thoroughly examined, will, I believe, appear to be 'the fellow-feeling only of men of the ſame rank and 'degree of life for one another, on account of the evils 'to which they themſelves are liable. Our ſenſations 'are, I am afraid, very cold towards thoſe who are at 'a great diſtance from us, and whoſe calamities can 'conſequently never reach us.'

'I remember,' cries Amelia, 'a ſentiment of Dr. 'Harriſon's, which he told me was in ſome Latin 'book: *I am a man myſelf, and my heart is intereſted 'in whatever can befal the reſt of mankind.* That is 'the ſentiment of a good man, and whoever thinks 'otherwiſe is a bad one.'

'I have often told you, my dear Emily,' cries Booth, 'that all men, as well the beſt as the worſt, 'act alike from the principle of ſelf-love. Where be-'nevolence therefore is the uppermoſt paſſion, ſelf-love 'directs you to gratify it by doing good, and by re-'lieving the diſtreſſes of others; for they are then in re-'ality your own. But where ambition, avarice, pride, 'or any other paſſion governs the man, and keeps his be-'nevolence down, the miſeries of all other men affect 'him no more than they would a ſtock or a ſtone. 'And thus the man and his ſtatue have often the ſame 'degree of feeling or compaſſion.'

'I have often wiſhed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'to 'hear you converſe with Dr. Harriſon on this ſubject; 'for I am ſure he would convince you, though I can-

'not,

'not, that there are really ſuch things as religion and 'virtue.'

This was not the firſt hint of this kind which Amelia had given, for ſhe ſometimes apprehended from his diſcourſe that he was little better than an atheiſt; a conſideration which did not diminiſh her affection for him, but gave her great uneaſineſs. On all ſuch occaſions, Booth immediately turned the diſcourſe to ſome other ſubject; for though he had in other points a great opinion of his wife's capacity, yet as a divine or a philoſopher, he did not hold her in a very reſpectable light, nor did he lay any great ſtreſs on her ſentiments in ſuch matters. He now therefore gave a ſpeedy turn to the converſation, and began to talk of affairs below the dignity of this hiſtory.

# BOOK XI.

## CHAP. I.

*Containing a very polite Scene.*

WE will now look back to ſome perſonages, who, though not the principal characters in this hiſtory, have yet made too conſiderable a figure in it to be abruptly dropped. And theſe are Colonel James and his lady.

This fond couple never met till dinner the day after the maſquerade, when they happened to be alone together in an anti-chamber before the arrival of the reſt of the company.

The converſation began with the colonel's ſaying---'I hope, Madam, you got no cold laſt night at the 'maſquerade?' To which the lady anſwered by much 'the ſame kind of queſtion.'

They then ſat together near five minutes without opening their mouths to each other. At laſt Mrs. James ſaid---'Pray, Sir, who was that maſque with 'you in the dreſs of a ſhepherdeſs? How could you 'expoſe yourſelf by walking with ſuch a trollop in 'public; for certainly no woman of any figure would

'appear

'appear there in such a dress. You know, Mr. James,
'I never interfere with your affairs; but I would, me-
'thinks, for my own sake, if I was you, preserve a
'little decency in the face of the world.'

'Upon my word,' said James, 'I do not know
'whom you mean. A woman in such a dress might
'speak to me for aught I know; a thousand people
'speak to me at a masquerade. But I promise you I
'spoke to no woman acquaintance there that I know
'of. Indeed, I now recollect there was a woman in the
'dress of a shepherdess, and there was another auk-
'ward thing in a blue domino that plagued me a little;
'but I soon got rid of them.'

'And I suppose you do not know the lady in the
'blue domino neither?'---'Not I, I assure you,' said
James. 'But pray, why do you ask me these ques-
'tions? It looks so like jealousy.'

'Jealousy!' cries she; 'I jealous! no, Mr. James,
'I shall never be jealous, I promise you, especially of
'the lady in the blue domino; for, to my knowledge,
'she despises you of all the human race.'

'I am heartily glad of it,' said James; 'for I never
'saw such a tall aukward monster in my life.'

'That is a very cruel way of telling me you knew me.'

'You, Madam,' said James; 'you was in a black
'domino.'

'It is not so unusual a thing, I believe you yourself
'know, to change dresses. I own, I did it to discover
'some of your tricks. I did not think you could have
'distinguished the tall aukward monster so well.'

'Upon my soul,' said James, 'if it was you, I did
'not even suspect it; so you ought not to be offended at
'what I have said ignorantly.'

'Indeed, Sir,' cries she, 'you cannot offend me by
'any thing you can say to my face; no, by my soul,
'I despise you too much. But I wish, Mr. James,
'you would not make me the subject of your conversa-
'tion amongst your wenches. I desire I may not be
'afraid of meeting them for fear of their insults: that

'I may

'I may not be told by a dirty trollop, you make me the 'ſubject of your wit amongſt them, of which it ſeems 'I am the favourite topic. Though you have married 'a tall aukward monſter, Mr. James, I think ſhe hath 'a right to be treated, as your wife, with reſpect at 'leaſt. Indeed, I ſhall never require any more: in-'deed, Mr. James, I never ſhall. I think a wife hath 'a title to that.'

'Who told you this, Madam?' ſaid James.

'Your ſlut,' ſaid ſhe; 'your wench, your ſhep-'herdeſs.'

'By all that's ſacred,' cries James, 'I do not know 'who the ſhepherdeſs was.'

'By all that's ſacred then,' ſays ſhe, 'ſhe told me 'ſo, and I am convinced ſhe told me the truth. But 'I do not wonder at your denying it; for that is 'equally conſiſtent with honour, as to behave in ſuch a 'manner to a wife who is a gentlewoman. I hope 'you will allow me that, Sir. Becauſe I had not quite 'ſo great a fortune, I hope you do not think me be-'neath you, or that you did me any honour in marry-'ing me. I am come of as good a family as yourſelf, 'Mr. James; and if my brother knew how you treated 'me, he would not bear it.

'Do you threaten me with your brother, Madam?' ſaid James.

'I will not be ill-treated, Sir,' anſwered ſhe.

'Nor I neither, Madam,' cries he; 'and therefore I 'deſire you will prepare to go into the country to-mor-'row morning.'

'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhall not.'

'By heavens, Madam, but you ſhall,' anſwered he: 'I will have my coach at the door to-morrow morning 'by ſeven; and you ſhall either go into it or be car-'ried.'

'I hope, Sir, you are not in earneſt,' ſaid ſhe.

'Indeed, Madam,' anſwered he, 'but I am in earneſt, 'and reſolved; and into the country you go to-mor-'row.'

'But

'But why into the country,' ſaid ſhe, Mr. James?' 'Why will you be ſo barbarous to deny me the plea-'ſure of the town?'

'Becauſe you interfere with my pleaſures,' cries James; 'which I have told you long ago I would not 'ſubmit to. It is enough for fond couples to have 'theſe ſcenes together. I thought we had been upon a 'better footing, and had cared too little for each other 'to become mutual plagues. I thought you had been 'ſatisfied with the full liberty of doing what you 'pleaſe.'

'So I am; I defy you to ſay I have ever given you 'any uneaſineſs.'

'How,' cries he, 'have you not juſt now upbraided 'me with what you heard at the maſquerade?'

'I own,' ſaid ſhe, 'to be inſulted by ſuch a creature 'to my face ſtung me to the ſoul. I muſt have had no 'ſpirit to bear the inſults of ſuch an animal. Nay, 'ſhe ſpoke of you with equal contempt. Whoever ſhe 'is, I promiſe you, Mr. Booth is her favourite. But, 'indeed, ſhe is unworthy any one's regard: for ſhe be-'haved like an arrant dragoon.'

'Hang her,' cries the colonel, 'I know nothing of 'her.'

'Well, but Mr. James, I am ſure you will not ſend 'me into the country. Indeed, I will not go into the 'country.'

'If you was a reaſonable woman,' cries James, 'perhaps I ſhould not deſire it: and, on one conſider-'ation---'

'Come, name your conſideration,' ſaid ſhe.

'Let me firſt experience your diſcernment,' ſaid he. 'Come, Molly, let me try your judgment. Can you 'gueſs at any woman of your acquaintance that I 'like?'

'Sure,' ſaid ſhe, 'it cannot be Mrs. Booth!'

'And why not Mrs. Booth?' anſwered he. 'Is ſhe 'not the fineſt woman in the world?'

'Very far from it,' replied ſhe, 'in my opinion.'

'Pray,

'Pray, what faults, said he, can you find in her?'

'In the first place,' cries Mrs. James, her eyes are 'too large; and she hath a look with them that I do 'not know how to describe: but I know I do not like 'it. Then her eye-brows are too large; therefore, 'indeed, she doth all in her power to remedy this with 'her pincers: for if it was not for those, her eye-brows 'would be preposterous. Then her nose, as well pro-'portioned as it is, has a visible scar on one side. Her 'neck likewise is too protuberant for the genteel size, 'especially as she laces herself: for no woman in my 'opinion can be genteel, who is not entirely flat before. 'And lastly, she is both too short and too tall. Well, 'you may laugh, Mr. James; I know what I mean, 'though I cannot well express it. I mean, that she is 'too tall for a pretty woman, and too short for a fine 'woman. There is such a thing as a kind of insipid 'medium, a kind of something that is neither one thing 'nor another. I know not how to express it more clear-'ly; but when I say such a one is a pretty woman, a pretty 'thing, a pretty creature, you know very well I mean a 'little woman; and when I say such a one is a very fine 'woman, a very fine person of a woman, to be sure I 'must mean a tall woman. Now a woman that is be-'tween both, is certainly neither the one nor the other.'

'Well, I own,' said he, 'you have explained your-'self with great dexterity; but with all these imper-'fections, I cannot help liking her.'

'That you need not tell me, Mr. James,' answered the lady; 'for that I knew before you desired me to 'invite her to your house. And nevertheless, did not 'I, like an obedient wife, comply with your desires? 'did I make any objection to the party you proposed 'for the masquerade, though I knew very well your 'motive? what can the best of wives do more? To 'procure you success is not in my power; and if I may 'give you my opinion, I believe you never will suc-'ceed with her.

'Is

'Is her virtue so very impregnable?' said he, with a sneer.

'Her virtue,' answered Mrs. James, 'hath the best 'guard in the world, which is a most violent love for 'her husband.'

'All pretence and affectation!' cries the colonel. 'It is impossible she should have so little taste, or, in-'deed, so little delicacy, as to like such a fellow.'

'Nay, I do not much like him myself,' said she. 'He 'is not indeed at all such a sort of a man as I should 'like; but I thought he had been generally allowed to 'be handsome.'

'He handsome!' cries James; what, with a nose 'like the proboscis of an elephant, with the shoulders 'of a porter, and the legs of a chairman? The fellow 'has not in the least the look of a gentleman; and one 'would rather think he had followed the plough than 'the camp all his life.'

'Nay, now I protest,' said she, 'I think you do 'him injustice. He is genteel enough in my opinion. 'It is true, indeed, he is not quite of the most delicate 'make; but whatever he is, I am convinced she thinks 'him the finest man in the world.'

'I cannot believe it,' answered he peevishly. 'But 'will you invite her to dinner here to-morrow?'

'With all my heart, and as often as you please,' answered she. 'But I have some favours to ask of you. First, 'I must hear no more of going out of town till I please.'

'Very well,' cried he.

'In the next place,' said she, 'I must have two 'hundred guineas within these two or three days.'

'Well, I agree to that too,' answered he. 'And 'when I do go out of town, too, I go to Tunbridge, 'I insist upon that; and from Tunbridge I go to Bath '---positively to Bath. And I promise you faithfully 'I will do all in my power to carry Mrs. Booth with me.'

'On that condition,' answered he, 'I promise you, 'you shall go wherever you please. And to shew you 'I will even prevent your wishes by my generosity, as

'soon

'ſoon as I receive the five thouſand pounds, which I 'am going to take up on one of my eſtates, you ſhall 'have two hundred more.'

She thanked him with a low curteſy; and he was in ſuch good-humour that he offered to kiſs her. To this kiſs ſhe coldly turned her cheek, and then flirting her fan, ſaid---'Mr. James, there is one thing I forgot to 'mention to you, I think you intend to get a commiſ-'ſion in ſome regiment abroad for this young man. 'Now if you would take my advice, I know this will 'not oblige his wife; and beſides, I am poſitive ſhe 'reſolves to go with him. But if you can provide for 'him in ſome regiment at home, I know ſhe will dearly 'love you for it; and when he is ordered to quarters, 'ſhe will be left behind---and Yorkſhire or Scotland, 'I think, is as good a diſtance as either of the Indies.'

'Well, I will do what I can,' anſwered James: 'but I cannot aſk any thing yet; for I got two places 'of a hundred a year each for two of my footmen, 'within this fortnight.'

At this inſtant a violent knock at the door ſignified the arrival of their company; upon which, both huſband and wife put on their beſt looks to receive their gueſts; and, from their behaviour to each other during the reſt of the day, a ſtranger might have concluded he had been in company with the fondeſt couple in the univerſe.

## CHAP. II.

### *Matters political.*

BEFORE we return to Booth, we will relate a ſcene in which Doctor Harriſon was concerned.

This good man, whilſt in the country, happened to be in the neighbourhood of a nobleman of his acquaintance, and whom he knew to have very conſiderable intereſt with the miniſters at that time.

The doctor, who was very well known to this nobleman, took this opportunity of paying him a viſit in order to recommend poor Booth to his favour. Nor did he much doubt of his ſucceſs, the favour he was to

aſk being a very ſmall one, and to which he thought the ſervice of Booth gave him ſo juſt a title.

The doctor's name ſoon gained him an admiſſion to the preſence of this great man, who indeed received him with much courteſy and politeneſs; not ſo much perhaps from any particular regard to the ſacred function, nor from any reſpect to the doctor's perſonal merit, as from ſome conſiderations which the reader will perhaps gueſs anon. After many ceremonials, and ſome previous diſcourſe on different ſubjects, the doctor opened his buſineſs, and told the great man, that he was come to him to ſolicit a favour for a young gentleman who had been an officer in the army, and was now on half-pay. 'All the favour I aſk, my lord,' ſaid he, 'is, 'that this gentleman may be again admitted *ad eundem*. 'I am convinced your lordſhip will do me the juſtice to 'think I would not aſk for a worthleſs perſon; but, 'indeed, the young man I mean hath very extraordinary merit. He was at the ſiege of Gibralter, in 'which he behaved with diſtinguiſhed bravery; and 'was dangerouſly wounded at two ſeveral times in the 'ſervice of his country. I will add, that he is at preſent in great neceſſity, and hath a wife and ſeveral 'children, for whom he hath no other means of providing; and if it will recommend him farther to your 'lordſhip's favour, his wife, I believe, is one of the 'beſt and worthieſt of all her ſex.'

'As to that, my dear doctor,' cries the nobleman, 'I ſhall make no doubt. Indeed, any ſervice I ſhall 'do the gentleman will be upon your account. As to 'neceſſity it is the plea of ſo many, that it is impoſſible 'to ſerve them all. And with regard to the perſonal 'merit of theſe inferior officers, I believe, I need not 'tell you that it is very little regarded. But if you 'recommend him, let the perſon be what he will, I am 'convinced it will be done: for I know it is in your 'power at preſent to aſk for a greater matter than this.'

'I depend entirely upon your lordſhip,' anſwered the doctor. 'Indeed,

'Indeed, my worthy friend,' replied the lord, 'I 'will not take a merit to myſelf, which will ſo little 'belong to me. You are to depend on yourſelf. It 'falls out very luckily too at this time, when you have 'it in your power ſo greatly to oblige us.'

'What, my lord, is in my power?' cries the doctor.

'You certainly know,' anſwered his lordſhip, 'how 'hard Colonel Trompington is run at your town, in the 'election of a mayor; they tell me, it will be a very 'near thing, unleſs you join us. But we know it is 'in your power to do the buſineſs, and turn the ſcale. 'I heard your name mentioned the other day on that 'account; and I know you may have any thing in rea-'ſon, if you will give us your intereſt.'

'Sure, my lord,' cries the doctor, 'you are not in 'earneſt in aſking my intereſt for the colonel?'

'Indeed I am,' anſwered the peer. 'Why ſhould 'you doubt it?'

'For many reaſons,' anſwered the doctor. 'Firſt, 'I am an old friend and acquaintance of Mr. Fairfield, 'as your lordſhip, I believe, very well knows. The 'little intereſt, therefore, that I have, you may be aſ-'ſured, will go in his favour. Indeed I do not con-'cern myſelf deeply in theſe affairs, for I do not think 'it becomes my cloth ſo to do. But as far as I think 'it decent to intereſt myſelf, it will certainly be on the 'ſide of Mr. Fairfield. Indeed, I ſhould do ſo, if I 'was acquainted with both the gentlemen only by re-'putation; the one being a neighbouring gentleman, 'of a very large eſtate, a very ſober and ſenſible man, 'of known probity and attachment to the true intereſt 'of his country: the other is a mere ſtranger, a boy, 'a ſoldier of fortune; and, as far as I can diſcern from 'the little converſation I have had with him, of a very 'ſhallow capacity, and no education.'

'No education, my dear friend!' cries the noble-man: 'why, he hath been educated in half the courts 'of Europe.'

'Perhaps ſo, my lord,' anſwered the doctor; 'but 'I ſhall always be ſo great a pedant as to call a man of 'no learning, a man of no education. And from my 'own knowledge, I can aver, that I am perſuaded 'there is ſcarce a foot-ſoldier in the army more illite-'rate than the colonel.'

'Why as to Latin and Greek, you know,' replied the lord, 'they are not much required in the army.'

'It may be ſo,' ſaid the doctor. Then let ſuch per-'ſons keep to their own profeſſion. It is a very low 'civil capacity indeed for which an illiterate man can 'be qualified. And to ſpeak a plain truth, if your 'lordſhip is a friend to the colonel, you would do well 'to adviſe him to decline an attempt, in which I am 'certain he hath no probability of ſucceſs.'

'Well, Sir,' ſaid the lord, 'if you are reſolved 'againſt us, I muſt deal as freely with you, and tell 'you plainly I cannot ſerve you in your affair. Nay, 'it will be the beſt thing I can do, to hold my tongue; 'for if I ſhould mention his name with your recom-'mendation, after what you have ſaid, he would per-'haps never get provided for as long as he lives.'

'Is his own merit, then, my lord, no recommenda-'tion?' cries the doctor.

'My dear, dear Sir,' cries the other, 'what is the 'merit of a ſubaltern officer!'

'Surely, my lord,' cries the doctor, 'it is the merit 'which ſhould recommend him to the poſt of a ſubal-'tern officer. And it is a merit which will hereafter 'qualify him to ſerve his country in a higher capacity. 'And I do aſſure you of this young man, that he hath 'not only a good heart, but a good head too. And I 'have been told by thoſe who are judges, that he is for 'his age an excellent officer.'

'Very probably!' cries my lord; 'and there are 'abundance with the ſame merit, and the ſame qualifi-'cations, who want a morſel of bread for themſelves 'and their families.'

'It is an infamous ſcandal on the nation,' cries the doctor;

doctor; 'and I am heartily ſorry it can be ſaid even 'with a colour of truth.'

'How can it be otherwiſe?' ſays the peer. 'Do 'you think it is poſſible to provide for all men of 'merit?'

'Yes, ſurely do I,' ſaid the doctor. 'And very 'eaſily too.'

'How, pray?' cries the lord. 'Upon my word I 'ſhall be glad to know.'

'Only by not providing for thoſe who have none. 'The men of merit in any capacity are not, I am afraid, 'ſo extremely numerous, that we need ſtarve any of 'them, unleſs we wickedly ſuffer a ſet of worthleſs fel-'lows to eat their bread.'

'This is all mere Utopia,' cries his lordſhip. 'The 'chimerical ſyſtem of Plato's commonwealth, with 'which we amuſed ourſelves at the univerſity; politics 'which are inconſiſtent with the ſtate of human affairs.'

'Sure, my lord,' cries the doctor, 'we have read 'of ſtates where ſuch doctrines have been put in prac-'tice. What is your lordſhip's opinion of Rome in 'the earlier ages of the commonwealth, of Sparta, and 'even of Athens itſelf, in ſome periods of it's hiſtory?'

'Indeed, doctor,' cries the lord, 'all theſe notions 'are obſolete and long ſince exploded. To apply 'maxims of government drawn from the Greek and 'Roman hiſtories, to this nation, is abſurd and im-'poſſible. But if you will have Roman examples, 'fetch them from thoſe times of the republic that were 'moſt like our own. Do you not know, doctor, that 'this is as corrupt a nation as ever exiſted under the 'ſun? And would you think of governing ſuch a 'people by the ſtrict principles of honeſty and mora-'lity?'

'If it be ſo corrupt,' ſaid the doctor, 'I think it 'is high time to amend it. Or elſe it is eaſy to foreſee 'that Roman and Britiſh liberty will have the ſame 'fate; for corruption in the body politic as naturally 'tends to diſſolution as in the natural body.'

'I thank you for your ſimile,' cries my lord: 'for, 'in the natural body, I believe you will allow there is 'the ſeaſon of youth, the ſeaſon of manhood, and the 'ſeaſon of old age; and that, when the laſt of theſe ar- 'rives, it will be an impoſſible attempt by all the 'means of art to reſtore the body again to it's youth, 'or to the vigour of it's middle age. The ſame periods 'happen to every great kingdom. In it's youth, it 'riſes by arts and arms to power and proſperity. 'This it enjoys and flouriſhes with a while; and then 'it may be ſaid to be in the vigour of it's age, enriched 'at home with all the emoluments and bleſſings of 'peace, and formidable abroad with all the terrors of 'war. At length, this very proſperity introduces 'corruption; and then comes on it's old age. Virtue 'and learning, art and induſtry, decay by degrees. 'The people ſink into ſloth and luxury, and proſtitu- 'tion. It is enervated at home, becomes contempti- 'ble abroad; and ſuch indeed is it's miſery and wretch- 'edneſs, that it reſembles a man in the laſt decrepit 'ſtage of life, who looks with unconcern at his ap- 'proaching diſſolution.'

'This is a melancholy picture indeed,' cries the doctor; 'and if the latter part of it can be applied to 'our caſe, I ſee nothing but religion, which would 'have prevented this decrepit ſtate of the conſtitution, 'ſhould prevent a man of ſpirit from hanging himſelf 'out of the way of ſo wretched a contemplation.'

'Why ſo?' ſaid the peer. 'Why, hang myſelf, 'doctor? would it not be wiſer, think you, to make 'the beſt of your time, and the moſt you can, in ſuch 'a nation?'

'And is religion then to be really laid out of the 'queſtion?' cries the doctor.

'If I am to ſpeak my own opinion, Sir,' anſwered the peer, 'you know I ſhall anſwer in the negative. 'But you are too well acquainted with the world to be 'told, that the conduct of politicians is not formed 'upon the principles of religion.' 'I am'

'I am very ſorry for it,' cries the doctor; 'but I 'will talk to them then of honour and honeſty: this is 'a language which I hope they will at leaſt pretend to 'underſtand. Now to deny a man the preferment 'which he merits, and to give it to another man who 'doth not merit it, is a manifeſt act of injuſtice; and 'is conſequently inconſiſtent with both honour and ho-'neſty. Nor is it only an act of injuſtice to the man 'himſelf, but to the public, for whoſe good principally 'all public offices are, or ought to be, inſtituted. 'Now this good can never be compleated, nor obtained, 'but by employing all perſons according to their ca-'pacities. Wherever true merit is liable to be ſuper-'ſeded by favour and partiality, and men are entruſted 'with offices, without any regard to capacity or inte-'grity, the affairs of that ſtate will always be in a de-'plorable ſituation. Such, as Livy tells us, was the 'ſtate of Capua, a little before it's final deſtruction; 'and the conſequence your lordſhip well knows. But, 'my lord, there is another miſchief which attends this 'kind of injuſtice; and that is, it hath a manifeſt ten-'dency to deſtroy all virtue and all ability among the 'people, by taking away all that encouragement and 'incentive, which ſhould promote emulation, and raiſe 'men to aim at excelling in any art, ſcience, or pro-'feſſion. Nor can any thing, my lord, contribute 'more to render a nation contemptible among it's 'neighbours; for what opinion can other countries 'have of the councils, or what terror can they conceive 'of the arms, of ſuch a people? and it was chiefly 'owing to the avoiding of this error, that Oliver Crom-'well carried the reputation of England higher than it 'ever was at any other time. I will add only one ar-'gument more, and that is founded on the moſt narrow 'ſelfiſh ſyſtem of politics; and this is, that ſuch a 'conduct is ſure to create univerſal diſcontent and 'grumbling at home: for nothing can bring men to 'reſt ſatisfied, when they ſee others preferred to them, 'but an opinion that they deſerve that elevation; for,

'as

'as one of the greateſt men this kingdom ever produced, 'obſerves---

'One worthleſs man that gains what he pretends,
'Diſguſts a thouſand unpretending friends.

'With what heart-burnings then muſt any nation ſee 'themſelves obliged to contribute to the ſupport of a 'ſet of men, of whoſe incapacity to ſerve them they 'are well apprized, and who do their country a double 'diſkindneſs; by being themſelves employed in poſts 'to which they are unequal, and by keeping others out 'of thoſe employments for which they are qualified!'

'And do you really think, doctor,' cries the noble-man, 'that any miniſter could ſupport himſelf in this 'country upon ſuch principles as you recommend? 'Do you think he would be able to baffle an oppoſi-'tion, unleſs he ſhould oblige his friends, by confer-'ring places often contrary to his own inclinations and 'his own opinion?'

'Yes, really do I,' cries the doctor. 'Indeed, if a 'miniſter is reſolved to make good his confeſſion in the li-'turgy, *by leaving undone all thoſe things which he ought 'have done, and by doing all thoſe things which he ought 'not to have done*; ſuch a miniſter, I grant, will be obli-'ged to baffle opppoſition, as you are pleaſed to term it, 'by theſe arts; for, as Shakeſpeare ſome where ſays --

'Things ill begun, ſtrengthen themſelves by ill.

'But if, on the contrary, he will pleaſe to conſider the 'true intereſt of his country, and that only in great 'and national points; if he will engage his country 'in neither alliances or quarrels, but where it is really 'intereſted; if he will raiſe no money but what is 'wanted; nor employ any civil or military officers but 'what are uſeful; and place in theſe employments men 'of the higheſt integrity, and of the greateſt abilities; 'if he will employ ſome few of his hours to advance 'our trade, and ſome few more to regulate our domeſtic 'government; if he would do this, my lord, I will 'anſwer for it, he ſhall either have no oppoſition to baffle, 'or he ſhall baffle it by a fair appeal to his conduct.

'Such

'Such a minister may, in the language of the law, put 'himself on his country when he pleases, and he shall 'come off with honour and applause.'

'And do you really believe, doctor,' cries the peer, 'there ever was such a minister, or ever will be?'

'Why not, my lord?' answered the doctor. 'It 'requires no very extraordinary parts, nor any extra-'ordinary degree of virtue. He need practise no great 'instances of self-denial. He shall have power, and 'honour, and riches, and perhaps, all in a much 'greater degree than he can ever acquire by pursuing 'a contrary system. He shall have more of each, and 'much more of safety.'

'Pray, doctor,' said my lord, 'let me ask you one 'simple question. Do you really believe any man upon 'earth was ever a rogue out of choice?'

'Really my lord,' says the doctor, 'I am ashamed 'to answer in the affirmative: and yet, I am afraid, 'experience would almost justify me, if I should. Per-'haps the opinion of the world may sometimes mis-'lead men to think those measures necessary, which in 'reality are not so. Or the truth may be, that a man 'of good inclinations finds his office filled with such 'corruption by the iniquity of his predecessors, that 'he may despair of being capable of purging it; and so 'sits down contented, as Augeas did with the filth of 'his stables, not because he thought them the better, 'or that such filth was really necessary to a stable, but 'that he despaired of sufficient force to cleanse them.'

'I will ask you one question more, and I have done,' said the nobleman. 'Do you imagine that, if any 'minister was really as good as you would have him, 'the people in general would believe that he was so?'

'Truly, my lord,' said the doctor, 'I think they 'may be justified in not believing too hastily. But I 'beg leave to answer your lordship's question by ano-'ther. Doth your lordship believe that the people of 'Greenland, when they see the light of the sun, and

'feel

'feel his warmth, after ſo long a ſeaſon of cold and dark-
'neſs, will really be perſuaded that it ſhines upon them?'

My lord ſmiled at the conceit: and then the doctor took an opportunity to renew his ſuit; to which his lordſhip anſwered he would promiſe nothing, and could give him no hopes of ſucceſs. 'But you may be aſ-
'ſured,' ſaid he, with a leering countenance, 'I ſhall
'do him all the ſervice in my power.' A language which the doctor well underſtood, and ſoon after took a civil, but not a very ceremonious leave.

## CHAP. III.

### *The Hiſtory of Mr. Trent.*

WE will now return to Mr. Booth and his wife. The former had ſpent his time very uneaſily, ever ſince he had diſcovered what ſort of a man he was indebted to; but leſt he ſhould forget it, Mr. Trent now thought proper to remind him, in the following letter, which he received the next morning after he had put off the appointment.

'SIR,

'I AM ſorry the neceſſity of my affairs obliges me to
'mention that ſmall ſum which I had the honour to
'lend you the other night at play; and which I ſhall
'be much obliged to you, if you will let me have ſome
'time either to-day or to-morrow. I am, Sir, your
'moſt obedient, moſt humble ſervant,

'GEORGE TRENT.'

This letter a little ſurprized Booth, after the genteel, and indeed, as it appeared, generous behaviour of Trent. But leſt it ſhould have the ſame effect upon the reader, we will now proceed to account for this, as well as for ſome other phænomena that have appeared in this hiſtory; and which, perhaps, we ſhall be forgiven for not having opened more largely before.

Mr. Trent, then, was a gentleman, poſſibly of a good family; for it was not certain whence he ſprung on the father's ſide. His mother, who was the only parent he ever knew or heard of, was a ſingle gentle-
woman,

woman, and for ſome time carried on the trade of a milliner in Covent Garden. She ſent her ſon, at the age of eight years old, to a charity-ſchool, where he remained till he was of the age of fourteen, without making any great proficiency in learning. Indeed, it is not very probable he ſhould; for the maſter, who, in preference to a very learned and proper man, was choſen by a party into this ſchool, the ſalary of which was upwards of a hundred pounds a year, had himſelf never travelled through the Latin grammar, and was in truth a moſt conſummate blockhead.

At the age of fifteen, Mr. Trent was put clerk to an attorney, where he remained a very ſhort time before he took leave of his maſter---rather, indeed, departed without taking leave---and having broke open his mother's eſcritore, and carried off with him all the valuable effects he there found, to the amount of about fifty pounds, he marched off to ſea, and went on board a merchant-man, whence he was afterwards preſſed into a man of war.

In this ſervice he continued about three years; during which time, he behaved ſo ill in his moral character, that he twice underwent a very ſevere diſcipline for thefts in which he was detected; but, at the ſame time, he behaved ſo well as a ſailor in an engagement with ſome pirates, that he wiped off all former ſcores, and greatly recommended himſelf to his captain.

At his return home, being then about twenty years of age, he found that the attorney had in his abſence married his mother, had buried her, and ſecured all her effects, to the amount, as he was informed, of about fifteen hundred pounds. Trent applied to his ſtep-father, but to no purpoſe; the attorney utterly diſowned him, nor would he ſuffer him to come a ſecond time within his doors.

It happened that the attorney had, by a former wife, an only daughter, a great favourite, who was about the ſame age with Trent himſelf, and had, during his reſidence at her father's houſe, taken a very great liking

to

to this young fellow, who was extremely handſome, and perfectly well made. This her liking was not, during his abſence, ſo far extinguiſhed, but that it immediately revived on his return. Of this, ſhe took care to give Mr. Trent proper intimation; for ſhe was not one of thoſe backward and delicate ladies, who can die rather than make the firſt overture. Trent was overjoyed at this, and with reaſon; for ſhe was a very lovely girl in her perſon, the only child of a rich father; and the proſpect of ſo compleat a revenge on the attorney, charmed him above all the reſt. To be as ſhort in the matter as the parties, a marriage was ſoon conſummated between them.

The attorney at firſt raged and was implacable; but at laſt, fondneſs for his daughter ſo far overcame reſentment, that he advanced a ſum of money to buy his ſon-in-law (for now he acknowledged him as ſuch) an enſign's commiſſion in a marching regiment then ordered to Gibralter; at which place, the attorney heartily hoped that Trent might be knocked on the head: for in that caſe he thought he might marry his daughter more agreeably to his own ambition, and to her advantage.

The regiment into which Trent purchaſed, was the ſame with that in which Booth likewiſe ſerved; the one being an enſign, and the other a lieutenant, in the two additional companies.

Trent had no blemiſh in his military capacity. Though he had had but an indifferent education, he was naturally ſenſible and genteel; and nature, as we have ſaid, had given him a very agreeable perſon. He was likewiſe a very bold fellow; and as he really behaved himſelf every way well enough while he was at Gibralter, there was ſome degree of intimacy between him and Booth.

When the ſiege was over, and the additional companies were again reduced, Trent returned to his wife, who received him with great joy and affection. Soon after this an accident happened, which proved the utter

ter ruin of his father-in-law, and ended in breaking his heart. This was nothing but making a miſtake, pretty common at this day, of writing another man's name to a deed inſtead of his own. In truth, this matter was no leſs than what the law calls forgery. and was juſt then made capital by an act of parliament. From this offence, indeed, the attorney was acquited by not admitting the proof of the party, who was to avoid his own deed by his evidence, and therefore no witneſs, according to thoſe excellent rules, called the law of evidence; a law very excellently calculated for the preſervation of the lives of his majeſty's roguiſh ſubjects, and moſt notably uſed for that purpoſe.

But though by common law the attorney was honourably acquitted, yet as common ſenſe manifeſted to every one that he was guilty, he unhappily loſt his reputation, and of conſequence his buſineſs; the chagrin of which latter ſoon put an end to his life.

The proſecution had been attended with a very great expence; for, beſides the ordinary coſts of avoiding the gallows by the help of the law, there was a very high article of no leſs than a thouſand pounds paid down to remove out of the way a witneſs againſt whom there was no legal exception. The poor gentleman had beſides ſuffered ſome loſſes in buſineſs; ſo that, to the ſurprize of all his acquaintance, when his debts were paid, there remained no more than a ſmall eſtate of fourſcore pounds a year, which he ſettled upon his daughter, far out of the reach of her huſband, and about two hundred pounds in money.

The old gentleman had not long been in his grave, before Trent ſet himſelf to conſider ſeriouſly of the ſtate of his affairs. He had lately began to look on his wife with a much leſs degree of liking and deſire than formerly; for he was one of thoſe who think too much of one thing is good for nothing. Indeed he had indulged theſe ſpeculations ſo far, that, I believe, his wife, though one of the prettieſt women in town, was

the laſt ſubject that he would have choſe for an amorous dalliance.

Many other perſons, however, greatly differed from him in this opinion. Amongſt the reſt, was the illuſtrious peer of amorous memory. This noble peer having therefore got a view of Mrs. Trent one day in the ſtreet, did, by means of an emiſſary then with him, make himſelf acquainted with her lodging, to which he immediately laid ſiege in form, ſetting himſelf down in a lodging directly oppoſite to her, from whence the battery of ogles began to play the very next morning.

This ſiege had not continued long, before the governor of the garriſon became ſufficiently apprized of all the works which were carrying on; and having well reconnoitred the enemy, and diſcovered who he was, notwithſtanding a falſe name and ſome diſguiſe of his perſon, he called a council of war within his own breaſt. In fact, to drop all allegory, he began to conſider whether his wife was not really a more valuable poſſeſſion than he had lately thought her. In ſhort, as he had been diſappointed in her fortune, he now conceived ſome hopes of turning her beauty into a fortune.

Without communicating theſe views to her, he ſoon ſcraped an acquaintance with his oppoſite neighbour by the name which he there uſurped, and counterfeited an entire ignorance of his real name and title. On this occaſion, Trent had his diſguiſe likewiſe, for he affected the utmoſt ſimplicity; of which affectation, as he was a very artful fellow, he was extremely capable.

The peer fell plumb into this ſnare; and when, by the ſimplicity, as he imagined, of the huſband, he became acquainted with the wife, he was ſo extravagantly charmed with her perſon, that he reſolved, whatever was the coſt or the conſequence, he would poſſeſs her.

His lordſhip, however, preſerved ſome caution in his management of this affair; more, perhaps, than was neceſſary. As for the huſband, none was requiſite, for he knew all he could; and with regard to the wife herſelf, as ſhe had, for ſome time, perceived the

decreaſe

decreaſe of her huſband's affection, (for few women are, I believe, to be impoſed upon in that matter) ſhe was not diſpleaſed to find the return of all that complaiſance and endearment, of thoſe looks and languiſhments, from another agreeable perſon, which ſhe had formerly received from Trent, and which ſhe now found ſhe ſhould receive from him no longer.

My lord, therefore, having been indulged with as much opportunity as he could wiſh from Trent, and having received rather more encouragement than he could well have hoped from the lady, began to prepare all matters for a ſtorm; when luckily Mr. Trent declaring he muſt go out of town for two days, he fixed on the firſt day of his departure as the time of carrying his deſign into execution.

And now, after ſome debate with himſelf in what manner he ſhould approach his love, he at laſt determined to do it in his own perſon; for he conceived, and perhaps very rightly, that the lady, like Semele, was not void of ambition, and would have preferred Jupiter in all his glory to the ſame deity in the diſguiſe of a humble ſhepherd. He dreſſed himſelf, therefore, in the richeſt embroidery of which he was maſter, and appeared before his miſtreſs arrayed in all the brightneſs of peerage. A ſight whoſe charms ſhe had not the power to reſiſt, and the conſequences are only to be imagined. In ſhort, the ſame ſcene which Jupiter acted with the above-mentioned miſtreſs of old, was more than beginning, when Trent burſt from the cloſet into which he had conveyed himſelf, and unkindly interrupted the action.

His lordſhip preſently run to his ſword; but Trent, with great calmneſs, anſwered, that as it was very well known he durſt fight, he ſhould not draw his ſword on this occaſion---'For ſure,' ſays he, 'my lord, it would 'be the higheſt imprudence in me to kill a man who is 'now become ſo conſiderably my debtor.' At which words, he fetched a perſon from the cloſet, who had

been confined with him, telling him he had done his buſineſs, and might now, if he pleaſed, retire.

It would be tedious here to amuſe the reader with all that paſſed on the preſent occaſion; the rage and confuſion of the wife, or the perplexity in which my lord was involved. We will omit therefore all ſuch matters, and proceed directly to buſineſs, as Trent and his lordſhip did ſoon after. And in the concluſion, my lord ſtipulated to pay a good round ſum, and to provide Mr. Trent with a good place on the firſt opportunity.

On the ſide of Mr. Trent were ſtipulated abſolute remiſſion of all paſt, and full indulgence for the time to come.

Trent now immediately took a houſe at the polite end of the town, furniſhed it elegantly, and ſet up his equipage, rigged out both himſelf and his wife with very handſome cloaths, frequented all public places where he could get admiſſion, puſhed himſelf into acquaintance: and his wife ſoon afterwards began to keep an aſſembly, or in the faſhionable phraſe, to be at home once a week; when, by my lord's aſſiſtance, ſhe was preſently viſited by moſt men of the firſt rank, and by all ſuch women of faſhion as are not very nice in their company.

My lord's amour with this lady laſted not long; for, as we have before obſerved, he was the moſt inconſtant of all the human race. Mrs. Trent's paſſion was not however, of that kind which leads to any very deep reſentment of ſuch fickleneſs. Her paſſion, indeed, was principally founded upon intereſt; ſo that foundation ſerved to ſupport another ſuperſtructure: and ſhe was eaſily prevailed upon, as well as her huſband, to be uſeful to my lord in a capacity which, though very often exerted in the polite world, hath not, as yet, to my great ſurprize, acquired any polite name, or, indeed, any which is not too coarſe to be admitted in this hiſtory.

After this preface, which we thought neceſſary to account for a character of which ſome of my country and collegiate

collegiate readers might poſſibly doubt the exiſtence, I ſhall proceed to what more immediately regards Mrs. Booth. The reader may be pleaſed to remember that Mr. Trent was preſent at the aſſembly to which Booth and his wife were carried by Mrs. James, and where Amelia was met by the noble peer.

His lordſhip, ſeeing there that Booth and Trent were old acquaintance, failed not, to uſe the language of ſportſmen, to put Trent on upon the ſcent of Amelia. For this purpoſe, that gentleman viſited Booth the very next day, and had purſued him cloſe ever ſince. By his means, therefore, my lord learned that Amelia was to be at the maſquerade, to which place ſhe was dogged by Trent in a ſailor's jacket; who meeting my lord, according to agreement, at the entrance of the opera-houſe, like the four-legged gentlemen of the ſame vocation, made a dead point, as it is called, at the game.

My lord was ſo ſatisfied and delighted with his converſation at the maſquerade with the ſuppoſed Amelia, and the encouragement which in reality ſne had given him, that, when he ſaw Trent the next morning, he embraced him with great fondneſs, gave him a Bank-note of a hundred pounds, and promiſed him both the Indies on his ſucceſs, of which he began now to have no manner of doubt.

The affair that happened at the gaming-table was likewiſe a ſcheme of Trent's, on a hint given by my lord to him, to endeavour to lead Booth into ſome ſcrape or diſtreſs, his lordſhip promiſing to pay whatever expence Trent might be led into by ſuch means. Upon his lordſhip's credit, therefore, the money lent to Booth was really advanced: and hence aroſe all that ſeeming generoſity, and indifference as to the payment; Trent being ſatisfied with the obligation conferred on Booth, by means of which he hoped to effect his purpoſe.

But now the ſcene was totally changed; for Mrs. Atkinſon, the morning after the quarrel, beginning ſeriouſly to recollect that ſhe had carried the matter ra-

ther too far, and might really injure Amelia's reputation---a thought to which the warm purſuit of her own intereſt had a good deal blinded her at the time---reſolved to viſit my lord himſelf, and to let him know the whole ſtory; for as ſhe had ſucceeded already in her favourite point, ſhe thought ſhe had no reaſon to fear any conſequence of the diſcovery. This reſolution ſhe immediately executed.

Trent came to attend his lordſhip juſt after Mrs. Atkinſon had left him. He found the peer in a very ill humour, and brought no news to comfort or recruit his ſpirits; for he had himſelf juſt received a billet from Booth, with an excuſe for himſelf and his wife, from accepting the invitation at Trent's houſe that evening, where matters had been previouſly concerted for their entertainment; and when his lordſhip was by accident to drop into the room where Amelia was, while Booth was to be engaged at play in another.

And now, after much debate, and after Trent had acquainted my lord with the wretched ſituation of Booth's circumſtances, it was reſolved that Trent ſhould immediately demand his money of Booth; and, upon his not paying it---for they both concluded it impoſſible he ſhould pay it---to put the note which Trent had for the money in ſuit againſt him, by the genteel means of paying it away to a nominal third perſon; and this they both conceived muſt end immediately in the ruin of Booth, and conſequently in the conqueſt of Amelia.

In this project, and with this hope, both my lord and his ſetter, or (if the ſportſmen ſo pleaſe) ſetting-dog, greatly exulted; and it was next morning executed, as we have already ſeen.

## CHAP. IV.

### *Containing ſome Diſtreſs.*

TRENT's letter drove Booth almoſt to madneſs. To be indebted to ſuch a fellow, at any rate, had ſtuck much in his ſtomach and had given him very great uneaſineſs; but to anſwer this demand in any other manner

manner than by paying the money was abſolutely what he could not bear. Again, to pay this money, he very plainly ſaw there was but one way; and this was by ſtripping his wife not only of every farthing, but almoſt of every rag ſhe had in the world: a thought ſo dreadful, that it chilled his very ſoul with horror; and yet pride, at laſt, ſeemed to repreſent this as the leſſer evil of the two.

But how to do this was ſtill a queſtion. It was not ſure, at leaſt he feared it was not, that Amelia herſelf would readily conſent to this; and, ſo far from perſuading her to ſuch a meaſure, he could not bear even to propoſe it. At length, his determination was, to acquaint his wife with the whole affair, and to aſk her conſent by way of aſking her advice; for he was well aſſured ſhe could find no other means of extricating him out of his dilemna. This he accordingly did, repreſenting the affair as bad as he could; though, indeed, it was impoſſible for him to aggravate the real truth.

Amelia heard him patiently, without once interrupting him. When he had finiſhed, ſhe remained ſilent ſome time; indeed, the ſhock ſhe received from this ſtory almoſt deprived her of the power of ſpeaking. At laſt ſhe anſwered---'Well, my dear, you aſk my 'advice; I certainly can give you no other than that 'the money muſt be paid.'

'But how muſt it be paid?' cries he. 'Oh, Hea-'vens! thou ſweeteſt creature! what, not once up-'braid me for bringing this ruin on thee!'

'Upbraid you, my dear!' ſays ſhe: 'would to Hea-'ven I could prevent your upbraiding yourſelf. But 'do not deſpair: I will endeavour by ſome means or 'other to get you the money.'

'Alas! my dear love,' cries Booth, 'I know the 'only way by which you can raiſe it. How can I 'conſent to that? Do you forget the fears you ſo lately 'expreſſed of what would be our wretched condition, 'when our little all was mouldered away? Oh, my 'Amelia! they cut my very heart-ſtrings, when you

'ſpoke

'ſpoke them; for I had then loſt this little all. In-
'deed, I aſſure you, I have not played ſince, nor ever
'will more.'

'Keep that reſolution,' ſaid ſhe, 'my dear, and I
'hope we ſhall yet recover the paſt!' At which words, caſting her eyes on the children, the tears burſt from her eyes, and ſhe cried---'Heaven will, I hope, pro-
'vide for us!'

A pathetic ſcene now enſued between the huſband and wife, which would not perhaps pleaſe many readers to ſee drawn at too full a length. It is ſufficient to ſay, that this excellent woman not only uſed her utmoſt endeavours to ſtifle and conceal her own concern, but ſaid and did every thing in her power to allay that of her huſband.

Booth was at this time to meet a perſon whom we have formerly mentioned in the courſe of our hiſtory. This gentleman had a place in the War Office, and pretended to be a man of great intereſt and conſequence; by which means he did not only receive great reſpect and court from the inferior officers, but actually bubbled ſeveral of their money, by undertaking to do them ſervices, which in reality were not within his power. In truth, I have known few great men who have not been beſet with one or more ſuch fellows as theſe, through whom the inferior part of mankind are obliged to make their court to the great men themſelves; by which means, I believe, principally, perſons of real merit have been often been deterred from the attempt; for theſe ſubaltern coxcombs ever aſſume an equal ſtate with their maſters, and look for an equal degree of reſpect to be paid to them; to which men of ſpirit, who are in every light their betters, are not eaſily brought to ſubmit. Theſe fellows, indeed, themſelves have a jealous eye towards all great abilities, and are ſure, to the utmoſt of their power, to keep all who are ſo endowed from the preſence of their maſters. They uſe their maſters, as bad miniſters have ſometimes uſed a prince; they keep all men of merit from his ears, and daily ſa-

crifice

crifice his true honour and intereſt to their own profit and their own vanity.

As ſoon as Booth was gone to his appointment with this man, Amelia immediately betook herſelf to her buſineſs with the higheſt reſolution. She packed up not only her own little trinkets, and thoſe of her children, but the greateſt part of her own poor cloaths, (for ſhe was but barely provided) and then drove in a hackney-coach to the ſame pawn-broker's who had before been recommended to her by Mrs. Atkinſon; who advanced her the money ſhe deſired.

Being now provided with her ſum, ſhe returned well-pleaſed home; and, her huſband coming in ſoon after, ſhe with much chearfulneſs delivered him all the money.

Booth was ſo overjoyed with the proſpect of diſcharging his debt to Trent, that he did not perfectly reflect on the diſtreſs to which his family was now reduced. The good-humour which appeared in the countenance of Amelia was perhaps another help to ſtifle thoſe reflections: but, above all, were the aſſurances he had received from the great man, whom he had met at a coffee-houſe, and who had promiſed to do him all the ſervice in his power; which ſeveral half-pay ſubaltern officers aſſured him was very conſiderable.

With this comfortable news he acquainted his wife; who either was, or ſeemed to be, extremely well pleaſed with it. And now he ſet out with the money in his pocket to pay his friend Trent, who, unluckily for him, happened not to be at home.

On his return home, he met his old friend the lieutenant, who thankfully paid him his crown, and inſiſted on his going with him and taking part of a bottle. This invitation was ſo eager and preſſing, that poor Booth, who could not reſiſt much importunity, complied.

While they were over this bottle, Booth acquainted his friend with the promiſes he had received that after-

noon

noon at the coffee-houſe, with which the old gentleman was very well pleaſed---'For I have heard,' ſays he, 'that gentleman hath very powerful intereſt.' But he informed him likewiſe that he had heard that the great man muſt be touched; for that he never did any thing without touching. Of this, indeed, the great man himſelf had given ſome oblique hints, by ſaying, with great ſagacity and ſlyneſs, that he knew where fifty pounds might be depoſited to much advantage.

Booth anſwered, that he would very readily advance a ſmall ſum, if he had it in his power; but that at preſent, it was not ſo; for that he had no more in the world than the ſum of fifty pounds, which he owed Trent, and which he intended to pay him the next morning.

'It is very right undoubtedly, to pay your debts,' ſays the old gentleman; 'but ſure, on ſuch an occaſion, 'any man but the rankeſt uſurer would be contented to 'ſtay a little while for his money; and it will be only 'a little while, I am convinced: for if you depoſit this 'ſum in the great man's hands, I make no doubt but 'you will ſucceed immediately in getting your commiſ-'ſion; and then I will help you to a method of taking 'up ſuch a ſum as this.' The old gentleman perſiſted in this advice, and backed it with every argument he could invent; declaring, as was indeed true, that he gave the ſame advice which he would purſue was the caſe his own.

Booth long rejected the opinion of his friend; till, as they had not argued with dry lips, he became heated with wine, and then at laſt the old gentleman ſucceeded. Indeed, ſuch was his love either for Booth, or for his own opinion, and perhaps for both, that he omitted nothing in his power. He even endeavoured to palliate the character of Trent, and unſaid half what he had before ſaid of that gentleman. In the end, he undertook to make Trent eaſy, and to go to him the very next morning for that purpoſe.

Poor Booth at laſt yielded, though with the utmoſt difficulty. Indeed, had he known quite as much of

Trent

Trent as the reader doth, no motive whatſoever would have prevailed on him to have taken the old gentleman's advice.

## CHAP. V.

*Containing more Wormwood, and other Ingredients.*

IN the morning Booth communicated the matter to Amelia; who told him, ſhe would not preſume to adviſe him in an affair of which he was ſo much the better judge.

While Booth remained in a doubtful ſtate what conduct to purſue, Bound came to make him a viſit; and informed him, that he had been at Trent's houſe, but found him not at home; adding, that he would pay him a ſecond viſit that very day, and would not reſt till he found him.

Booth was aſhamed to confeſs his wavering reſolution in an affair in which he had been ſo troubleſome to his friend; he therefore dreſſed himſelf immediately, and together they both went to wait on the little great man, to whom Booth now hoped to pay his court in the moſt effectual manner.

Bound had been longer acquainted with the modern methods of buſineſs than Booth; he adviſed his friend therefore to begin with tipping (as it is called) the great man's ſervant. He did ſo, and by that means got ſpeedy acceſs to the maſter.

The great man received the money, not as a gudgeon doth a bait, but as a pike receives a poor gudgeon into his maw. To ſay the truth, ſuch fellows as theſe may well be likened to that voracious fiſh, who fattens himſelf by devouring all the little inhabitants of the river. As ſoon as the great man had pocketed the caſh, he ſhook Booth by the hand, and told him he would be ſure to ſlip no opportunity of ſerving him, and would ſend him word as ſoon as any offered.

Here I ſhall ſtop one moment, and ſo, perhaps, will my good-natured reader; for ſurely it muſt be a hard heart which is not affected with reflecting on the manner in which this poor little ſum was raiſed, and on the manner in which it was beſtowed! A worthy family, the

wife

wife and children of a man who had loſt his blood abroad in the ſervice of his country, parting with their little all, and expoſed to cold and hunger, to pamper ſuch a fellow as this!

And if any ſuch reader as I mention ſhould happen to be in reality a great man, and in power, perhaps the horror of this picture may induce him to put a final end to this abominable practice of touching, as it is called; by which indeed a ſet of leeches are permitted to ſuck the blood of the brave and the indigent, of the widow and the orphan!

Booth now returned home, where he found his wife with Mrs. James. Amelia had, before the arrival of her huſband, abſolutely refuſed Mrs. James's invitation to dinner the next day; but when Booth came in, the lady renewed her application, and that in ſo preſſing a manner, that Booth ſeconded her; for though he had enough of jealouſy in his temper, yet ſuch was his friendſhip to the colonel, and ſuch his gratitude for the obligations which he had received from him, that his own unwillingneſs to believe any thing of him, co-operating with Amelia's endeavours to put every thing in the faireſt light, had brought him to acquit his friend of any ill-deſign. To this, perhaps, the late affair concerning my lord had moreover contributed: for it ſeems to me that the ſame paſſion cannot much energize on two different objects at one and the ſame time: an obſervation which, I believe, will hold as true, with regard to the cruel paſſions of jealouſy and anger, as to the gentle paſſion of love, in which one great and mighty object is ſure to engage the whole paſſion.

When Booth grew importunate, Amelia anſwered--- 'My dear, I ſhould not refuſe you whatever was in 'my power: but this is abſolutely out of my power; 'for, ſince I muſt declare the truth, I cannot dreſs my-'ſelf.'

'Why ſo?' ſaid Mrs. James; 'I am ſure you are 'in good health.' 'In

'Is there no other impediment to dreſſing but want 'of health, Madam?' anſwered Amelia.

'Upon my word, none that I know of,' replied Mrs. James.

'What do you think of want of cloaths, Madam?' ſaid Amelia.

'Ridiculous!' cries Mrs. James. 'What need 'have you to dreſs yourſelf out? You will ſee nobody 'but our own family, and I promiſe you I do not ex-'pect it. A plain night-gown will do very well.'

'But, if I muſt be plain with you, Madam,' ſaid Amelia, 'I have no other cloaths but what I have 'now on my back. I have not even a clean ſhift in 'the world---for you muſt know, my dear,' ſaid ſhe to 'Booth, that little Betty is walked off this morning, 'and hath carried all my linen with her.'

'How, my dear!' cries Booth; 'little Betty rob-'bed you!'

'It is even ſo,' anſwered Amelia. Indeed, ſhe ſpoke truth; for little Betty, having perceived the evening before that her miſtreſs was moving her goods, was willing to lend all the aſſiſtance in her power, and had accordingly moved off early that morning, taking with her whatever ſhe could lay her hands on.

Booth expreſſed himſelf with ſome paſſion on the occaſion, and ſwore he would make an example of the girl. 'If the little ſlut be above ground,' cried he, 'I will find her out, and bring her to juſtice!'

'I am really ſorry for this accident,' ſaid Mrs. James; 'and (though I know not how to mention it) 'I beg you will give me leave to offer you any linen of 'mine, till you can make new of your own.'

Amelia thanked Mrs. James, but declined the favour; ſaying, ſhe ſhould do well enough at home; and that, as ſhe had no ſervant now to take care of her children, ſhe could not, nor would not, leave them on any account.

'Then bring maſter and miſs with you,' ſaid Mrs.

James. 'You ſhall poſitively dine with us to-mor-
'row.'

'I beg, Madam, you will mention it no more,' ſaid Amelia; 'for beſides the ſubſtantial reaſons I have al-
'ready given, I have ſome things on my mind at pre-
'ſent which make me unfit for company: and I am re-
'ſolved nothing ſhall prevail on me to ſtir from home.'

Mrs. James had carried her invitation already to the very utmoſt limits of good-breeding, if not beyond them. She deſiſted therefore from going any farther; and after ſome ſhort ſtay longer took her leave, with many expreſſions of concern; which, however, great as it was, left her heart and her mouth together, before ſhe was out of the houſe.

Booth now declared that he would go in purſuit of little Betty; againſt whom he vowed ſo much vengeance, that Amelia endeavoured to moderate his anger, by repreſenting to him the girl's youth, and that this was the firſt fault ſhe had ever been guilty of. 'In-
'deed,' ſays ſhe, 'I ſhould be very glad to have my
'things again, and I would have the girl too puniſhed
'in ſome degree, which might poſſibly be for her own
'good; but I tremble to think of taking away her
'life.' For Booth in his rage had ſworn he would hang her.

'I know the tenderneſs of your heart, my dear,' ſaid Booth, 'and I love you for it; but I muſt beg
'leave to diſſent from your opinion. I do not think
'the girl in any light an object of mercy. She is not
'only guilty of diſhoneſty, but of cruelty; for ſhe
'muſt know our ſituation, and the very little we had
'left. She is, beſides, guilty of ingratitude to you,
'who have treated her with ſo much kindneſs, that
'you have rather acted the part of a mother than a
'miſtreſs. And ſo far from thinking her youth an ex-
'cuſe, I think it rather an aggravation. It is true,
'indeed, there are faults which the youth of the party
'very ſtrongly recommends to our pardon. Such are
'all thoſe which proceed from careleſſneſs, and want of
'thought;

'thought; but crimes of this black dye, which 'are committed with deliberation, and imply a bad 'mind, deſerve a more ſevere puniſhment in a young 'perſon than in one of riper years: for what muſt the 'mind be in old age, which hath acquired ſuch a de-'gree of perfection in villainy ſo very early! Such per-'ſons as theſe it is really a charity to the public to put 'out of the ſociety; and, indeed, a religious man 'would put them out of the world for the ſake of them-'ſelves; for whoever underſtands any thing of human 'nature muſt know, that ſuch people, the longer they 'live, the more they will accumulate vice and wick-'edneſs.'

'Well, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'I cannot argue 'with you on theſe ſubjects. I ſhall always ſubmit to 'your ſuperior judgment, and I know you too well to 'think that you will ever do any thing cruel.'

Booth then left Amelia to the care of her children, and went in purſuit of the thief.

## CHAP. VI.

### *A Scene of the Tragic Kind.*

HE had not been long gone, before a thundering knock was heard at the door of the houſe where Amelia lodged, and preſently after a figure all pale, ghaſtly, and almoſt breathleſs, ruſhed into the room where ſhe then was with her children.

This figure Amelia ſoon recognized to be Mrs. Atkinſon; though, indeed, ſhe was ſo diſguiſed, that at her firſt entrance Amelia ſcarce knew her. Her eyes were ſunk in her head, her hair diſhevelled, and not only her dreſs, but every feature in her face, was in the utmoſt diſorder.

Amelia was greatly ſhocked at this ſight, and the little girl was much frightened: as for the boy, he immediately knew her; and, running to Amelia, he cried---'La! mamma, what is the matter with poor 'Mrs. Atkinſon?'

As ſoon as Mrs. Atkinſon recovered her breath, ſhe

cried out---' O Mrs. Booth, I am the moſt miſerable ' of women! I have loſt the beſt of huſbands!'

Amelia looking at her with all the tenderneſs imaginable; forgetting, I believe, that there had ever been any quarrel between them; ſaid---' Good Heavens, Madam, what is the matter?'

' O Mrs. Booth!' anſwered ſhe, ' I fear I have loſt ' my huſband! The doctor ſays there is but little hope ' of his life. O Madam, however I have been in the ' wrong, I am ſure you will forgive me and pity me. ' I am ſure I am ſeverely puniſhed: for to that curſed ' affair I owe all my miſery.'

' Indeed, Madam,' cries Amelia, ' I am extremely ' concerned for your misfortune. But pray tell me, ' hath any thing happened to the ſerjeant?'

' O Madam!' cries ſhe, ' I have the greateſt reaſon ' to fear I ſhall loſe him. The doctor hath almoſt given ' him over. He ſays he hath ſcarce any hopes. O ' Madam! that evening that the fatal quarrel hap- ' pened between us, my dear captain took it ſo to ' heart, that he ſat up all night, and drank a whole ' bottle of brandy. Indeed, he ſaid he wiſhed to kill ' himſelf; for nothing could have hurt him ſo much in ' the world, he ſaid, as to have any quarrel between ' you and me. His concern, and what he drank to- ' gether, threw him into a high fever. So that, when ' I came home from my lord's---for, indeed, Madam, ' I have been and ſet all to rights; your reputation is ' now in no danger---when I came home, I ſay, I ' found the poor man in a raving delirious fit, and in ' that he hath continued ever ſince till about an ' hour ago, when he came perfectly to his ſenſes; but ' now he ſays he is ſure he ſhall die, and begs for ' Heaven's ſake to ſee you firſt. Would you, Ma- ' dam, would you have the goodneſs to grant my poor ' captain's deſire; conſider he is a dying man, and nei- ' ther he nor I ſhall ever aſk you a ſecond favour. He ' ſays he hath ſomething to ſay to you that he can

' men,

'mention to no other perſon, and that he cannot die 'in peace unleſs he ſees you.'

'Upon my word, Madam,' cries Amelia, 'I am 'extremely concerned at what you tell me. I knew 'the poor ſerjeant from his infancy, and always had 'an affection for him, as I think him to be one of the 'beſt-natured and honeſteſt creatures upon earth. I 'am ſure, if I could do him any ſervice---but of what 'uſe can my going be?'

'Of the higheſt in the world,' anſwered Mrs. Atkinſon. 'If you knew how earneſtly he entreated it, 'how his poor breaking heart begged to ſee you, you 'would not refuſe.'

'Nay, I do not abſolutely refuſe,' cries Amelia. 'Something to ſay to me of conſequence, and that he 'could not die in peace unleſs he ſaid it!' 'Did he ſay 'that Mrs. Atkinſon?'

'Upon my honour he did,' anſwered ſhe; 'and much 'more than I have related.'

'Well, I will go with you,' cries Amelia. 'I 'cannot gueſs what this ſhould be; but I will go.'

Mrs. Atkinſon then poured out a thouſand bleſſings and thankſgivings; and taking hold of Amelia's hand, and eagerly kiſſing it, cried out---'How could that 'fury, Paſſion, drive me to quarrel with ſuch a crea-'ture!'

Amelia told her, ſhe had forgiven and forgot it; and then, calling up the miſtreſs of the houſe, and committing to her the care of the children, ſhe cloaked herſelf up as well as ſhe could, and ſet out with Mrs. Atkinſon.

When they arrived at the houſe, Mrs. Atkinſon ſaid, ſhe would go firſt, and give the captain ſome notice; for that, if Amelia entered the room unexpectedly, the ſurprize might have an ill effect. She left, therefore, Amelia in the parlour, and proceeded directly up ſtairs.

Poor Atkinſon, weak and bad as was his condition, no ſooner heard that Amelia was come, than he diſco-

vered great joy in his countenance, and preſently afterwards ſhe was introduced to him.

Atkinſon exerted his utmoſt ſtrength to thank her for this goodneſs to a dying man, (for ſo he called himſelf.) He ſaid, he ſhould not have preſumed to give her this trouble, had he not had ſomething, which he thought of conſequence, to ſay to her, and which he could not mention to any other perſon. He then deſired his wife to give him a little box, of which he always kept the key himſelf, and afterwards begged her to leave the room for a few minutes; at which neither ſhe nor Amelia expreſſed any diſſatisfaction.

When he was alone with Amelia, he ſpoke as follows---'This, Madam, is the laſt time my eyes will 'ever behold what-----Do pardon me, Madam, I ne'ver will offend you more.' Here he ſunk down in his bed, and the tears guſhed from his eyes.

'Why ſhould you fear to offend me, Joe?' ſaid Amelia. 'I am ſure you never did any thing wil'lingly to offend me.'

'No, Madam,' anſwered he, 'I would die a thou'ſand times, before I would have ventured it in the 'ſmalleſt matter. But I cannot ſpeak; and yet I 'muſt. You cannot pardon me; and yet, perhaps, 'as I am a dying man, and never ſhall ſee you more--- 'Indeed, if I was to live after this diſcovery, I ſhall 'never dare to look you in the face again; and yet, 'Madam, to think I ſhall never ſee you more, is 'worſe than ten thouſand deaths.'

'Indeed, Mr. Atkinſon,' cries Amelia, bluſhing, and looking down on the floor, 'I muſt not hear you 'talk in this manner. If you have any thing to ſay, 'tell it me, and do not be afraid of my anger; for I 'think I may promiſe to forgive whatever it was poſſi'ble you ſhould do.'

'Here then, Madam,' ſaid he, 'is your picture; I 'ſtole it when I was eighteen years of age, and have 'kept it ever ſince. It is ſet in gold, with three little

'diamonds;

'diamonds; and yet I can truly ſay, it was not the 'gold nor the diamonds which I ſtole: it was that face, 'which, if I had been the emperor of the world------'

'I muſt not hear any more of this,' ſaid ſhe; 'com-'fort yourſelf, Joe, and think no more of this matter. 'Be aſſured, I freely and heartily forgive you. But 'pray compoſe yourſelf. Come, let me call in your 'wife.'

'Firſt, Madam, let me beg one favour,' cried he: 'conſider it is the laſt, and then I ſhall die in peace; 'let me kiſs that hand before I die.'

'Well, nay,' ſays ſhe, 'I do not know what I am 'doing---well---there.' She then careleſſly gave him her hand, which he put gently to his lips, and then preſently let it drop, and fell back into the bed.

Amelia now ſummoned Mrs. Atkinſon, who indeed was no farther off than juſt without the door. She then haſtened down ſtairs, and called for a great glaſs of water, which having drank off, ſhe threw herſelf into a chair; and the tears ran plentifully from her eyes with compaſſion for the poor wretch ſhe had juſt left in his bed.

To ſay the truth, without any injury to her chaſtity, that heart which had ſtood firm as a rock to all the attacks of title and equipage, of finery and flattery, and which all the treaſures of the univerſe could not have purchaſed, was yet a little ſoftened by the plain, honeſt, modeſt, involuntary, delicate, heroic paſſion, of this poor and humble ſwain; for whom, in ſpite of herſelf, ſhe felt a momentary tenderneſs and complacence, at which Booth, if he had known it, would perhaps have been diſpleaſed.

Having ſtaid ſome time in the parlour, and not finding Mrs. Atkinſon come down, (for indeed her huſband was then ſo bad ſhe could not quit him) Amelia left a meſſage with the maid of the houſe for her miſtreſs, purporting that ſhe ſhould be ready to do any thing in her power to ſerve her; and then left the houſe with a

confuſion

confuſion on her mind that ſhe had never felt before, and which any chaſtity that is not hewn out of marble muſt feel on ſo tender and delicate an occaſion.

## CHAP. VII.

*In which Booth meets with more than one Adventure.*

BOOTH having hunted about for two hours, at laſt ſaw a young lady, in a tattered ſilk gown, ſtepping out of a ſhop in Monmouth-ſtreet into a hackney-coach. This lady, notwithſtanding the diſguiſe of her dreſs, he preſently diſcovered to be no other than little Betty.

He inſtantly gave the alarm of 'Stop thief! ſtop 'coach!' upon which Mrs. Betty was immediately ſtopped in her vehicle, and Booth and his myrmidons laid hold of her.

The girl no ſooner found that ſhe was ſeized by her maſter, than the conſciouſneſs of her guilt overpowered her; for ſhe was not yet an experienced offender, and ſhe immediately confeſſed her crime.

She was then carried before a juſtice of the peace, where ſhe was ſearched; and there was ſoon found in her poſſeſſion four ſhillings and ſix-pence in money, beſide the ſilk gown, which was indeed proper furniture for Rag Fair, and ſcarce worth a ſingle farthing, though the honeſt ſhopkeeper in Monmouth-ſtreet had ſold it for a crown to this ſimple girl.

The girl being examined by the Magiſtrate, ſpoke as follows---'Indeed, Sir, an't pleaſe your worſhip, I am 'very ſorry for what I have done; and to be ſure, an't 'pleaſe your honour, my lord, it muſt have been the 'devil that put me upon it; for to be ſure, pleaſe your 'majeſty, I never thought upon ſuch a thing in my 'life before, any more than I did of my dying day; 'but, indeed, Sir, an't pleaſe your worſhip---

She was runnning on in this manner, when the juſtice interrupted her, and deſired her to give an account of what ſhe had taken from her maſter, and what ſhe had done with it.

'Indeed, an't pleaſe your majeſty,' ſaid ſhe, 'I 'took

'took no more than two ſhifts of Madam's; and I 'pawned them for five ſhillings, which I gave for the 'gown that's upon my back; and as for the money in 'my pocket, it is every farthing of it my own. I am 'ſure I intended to carry back the ſhifts too, as ſoon 'as ever I could get money to take them out.'

The girl having told them where the pawnbroker lived, the juſtice ſent to him, to produce the ſhifts, which he preſently did; for he expected a warrant to ſearch his houſe would be the conſequence of his refuſal.

The ſhifts being produced, on which the honeſt pawnbroker had lent five ſhillings, appeared plainly to be worth above thirty; indeed, when new, they had coſt much more; ſo that, by their goodneſs, as well as by their ſize, it was certain they could not have belonged to the girl.

Booth grew very warm againſt the pawnbroker. 'I hope, Sir,' ſaid he to the juſtice, 'there is ſome 'puniſhment for this fellow likewiſe? who ſo plainly 'appears to have known that theſe goods were ſtolen. 'The ſhops of theſe fellows may indeed be called the 'fountains of theft; for it is in reality the encourage-'ment which they meet with from theſe receivers of 'their goods, that induces men very often to become 'thieves; ſo that theſe deſerve equal, if not ſeverer 'puniſhment than the thieves themſelves.'

The pawnbroker proteſted his innocence, and denied the taking in the ſhifts. Indeed in this he ſpoke truth; for he had ſlipped into an inner room, as was always his cuſtom on theſe occaſions, and left a little boy to do the buſineſs, by which means he had carried on the trade of receiving ſtolen goods for many years with impunity, and had been twice acquitted at the Old Bailey, though the juggle appeared upon the moſt manifeſt evidence.

As the juſtice was going to ſpeak, he was interrupted by the girl, who falling upon her knees to Booth, with many tears, begged his forgiveneſs.

'Indeed,

'Indeed, Betty,' cries Booth, 'you do not deſerve 'forgiveneſs; for you know you had very good reaſons 'why you ſhould not have thought of robbing your 'miſtreſs, particularly at this time. And what fur-'ther aggravates your crime is, that you have 'robbed the beſt and kindeſt miſtreſs in the world. 'Nay, you are not only guilty of felony, but of a 'felonious breach of truſt; for you know very well 'every thing your miſtreſs had was entruſted to your 'care.'

Now it happened, by very great accident, that the juſtice, before whom the girl was brought, underſtood the law: turning therefore, to Booth, he ſaid---'Do 'you ſay, Sir, that this girl was entruſted with the 'ſhifts?'

'Yes, Sir,' ſaid Booth, 'ſhe was entruſted with 'every thing.'

'And will you ſwear that the goods ſtolen,' ſaid the juſtice, 'are worth forty ſhillings?'

'No, indeed Sir,' anſwered Booth, 'nor that they 'are worth thirty either.'

'Then, Sir,' cries the juſtice, 'the girl cannot be 'guilty of felony.'

'How, Sir,' ſaid Booth, 'is it not a breach of 'truſt? and is not a breach of truſt felony, and the 'worſt of felony too?'

'No, Sir,' anſwered the juſtice, 'a breach of truſt 'is no crime in our law, unleſs it be in a ſervant, and 'then the act of parliament requires the goods taken to 'be of the value of forty ſhillings.'

'So then a ſervant,' cries Booth, 'may rob his maſter of thirty-nine ſhillings whenever he pleaſes, and 'he cannot be puniſhed.'

'If the goods are under his care, he cannot,' cries the juſtice.

'I aſk your pardon, Sir,' ſays Booth, 'I do not 'doubt what you ſay; but ſure this is a very extraor-'dinary law.'

'Perhaps I think ſo too,' ſaid the juſtice; 'but

'it

'it belongs not to my office to make or mend laws; 'my buſineſs is only to execute them. If, therefore 'the caſe be as you ſay, I muſt diſcharge the girl.'

'I hope, however, you will puniſh the pawnbroker,' cries Booth.

'If the girl is diſcharged,' cries the juſtice, 'ſo muſt 'the pawnbroker: for if the goods are not ſtolen, he 'cannot be guilty of receiving them knowing them to 'be ſtolen. And beſides, as to his offence, to ſay the 'truth, I am almoſt weary of proſecuting it; for ſuch 'are the difficulties laid in the way of this proſecution, 'that it is almoſt impoſſible to convict any one on it, 'And to ſpeak my opinion plainly, ſuch are the laws, 'and ſuch the method of proceeding, that one would 'almoſt think our laws were rather made for the pro- 'tection of rogues, than for the puniſhment of them.'

Thus ended this examination: the thief and the receiver went about their buſineſs, and Booth departed in order to go home to his wife.

In his way home, Booth was met by a lady in a chair; who immediately, upon ſeeing him, ſtopped her chair, bolted out of it, and going directly up to him, ſaid---'So, Mr. Booth, you have kept your word with me!'

This lady was no other than Miſs Matthews, and the ſpeech ſhe meant, was of a promiſe made to her at the maſquerade of viſiting her within a day or two; which, whether he ever intended to keep, I cannot ſay; but in truth, the ſeveral accidents that had ſince happened to him, had ſo diſcompoſed his mind, that he had abſolutely forgot it.

Booth, however, was too ſenſible, and too well bred, to make the excuſe of forgetfulneſs to a lady; nor could he readily find any other. While he ſtood, therefore, heſitating, and looking not over-wiſe, Miſs Matthews ſaid---'Well, Sir, ſince by your confuſion I ſee 'you have ſome grace left, I will pardon you on one 'condition; and that is, that you will ſup with me 'this night. But if you fail me now, expect all the

'revenge

'revenge of an injured woman!' She then bound herſelf by a moſt outrageous oath, that ſhe would complain to his wife. 'And I am ſure,' ſays ſhe, 'ſhe is 'ſo much a woman of honour, as to do me juſtice. 'And though I miſcarried in my firſt attempt, be 'aſſured I will take care of my ſecond.'

Booth aſked her what ſhe meant by her firſt attempt; to which ſhe anſwered, that ſhe had already writ his wife an account of his ill uſage of her, but that ſhe was pleaſed it had miſcarried. She then repeated her aſſeverations, that ſhe would now do it effectually, if he diſappointed her.

This threat ſhe reckoned would moſt certainly terrify poor Booth; and, indeed ſhe was not miſtaken; for I believe it would have been impoſſible, by any other menace, or by any other means, to have brought him once even to balance in his mind on this queſtion. But by this threat ſhe prevailed; and Booth promiſed, upon his word and honour, to come to her at the hour appointed. After which ſhe took leave of him with a ſqueeze by the hand, and a ſmiling countenance, and walked back to her chair.

But, however, ſhe might be pleaſed with having obtained this promiſe, Booth was far from being delighted with the thoughts of having given it. He looked, indeed, upon the conſequences of this meeting with horror; but as to the conſequence which was ſo apparently intended by the lady, he reſolved againſt it. At length, he came to this determination; to go, according to his appointment, to argue the matter with the lady, and to convince her if poſſible, that from a regard to his honour only, he muſt diſcontinue her acquaintance. If this failed to ſatisfy her, and ſhe ſtill perſiſted in her threats to acquaint his wife with the affair, he then reſolved, whatever pains it coſt him, to communicate the whole truth himſelf to Amelia, from whoſe goodneſs he doubted not but to obtain an abſolute remiſſion.

CHAP.

## CHAP. VIII.

*In which Amelia appears in a Light more amiable than gay.*

WE will now return to Amelia, whom we left in ſome perturbation of mind departing from Mrs. Atkinſon.

Though ſhe had before walked through the ſtreets in a very improper dreſs with Mrs. Atkinſon, ſhe was unwilling, eſpecially as ſhe was alone, to return in the ſame manner. Indeed ſhe was ſcarce able to walk in her preſent condition; for the caſe of poor Atkinſon had much affected her tender heart, and her eyes had overflown with many tears.

It occurred likewiſe to her at preſent, that ſhe had not a ſingle ſhilling in her pocket or at home, to provide food for herſelf and family. In this ſituation ſhe reſolved to go immediately to the pawnbroker, whither ſhe had gone before, and to depoſit her picture for what ſhe could raiſe upon it. She then immediately took a chair, and put her deſign in execution.

The intrinſic value of the gold, in which this picture was ſet, and of the little diamonds which ſurrounded it, amounted to nine guineas. This therefore was advanced to her, and the prettieſt face in the world (ſuch is often the fate of beauty) was depoſited, as of no value, into the bargain.

When ſhe came home, ſhe found the following letter from Mrs. Atkinſon.---

'MY DEAREST MADAM,

'AS I know your goodneſs, I could not delay a 'moment acquainting you with the happy turn 'of my affairs ſince you went. The doctor, on his 'return to viſit my huſband, has aſſured me, that the 'captain was on the recovery, and in very little danger; 'and I really think he is ſince mended. I hope to 'wait on you ſoon with better news. Heaven bleſs you, 'dear Madam; and believe me to be, with the utmoſt 'ſincerity, your moſt obliged, obedient, humble ſervant,

'ATKINSON.'

Amelia was really pleaſed with this letter; and now it being paſt four o'clock, ſhe deſpaired of ſeeing her huſband till the evening. She therefore provided ſome tarts for her children, and then eating nothing but a ſlice of bread and butter herſelf, ſhe began to prepare for the captain's ſupper.

There were two things of which her huſband was particularly fond, which, though it may bring the ſimplicity of his taſte into great contempt with ſome of my readers, I will venture to name. Theſe were, a fowl and egg-ſauce, and mutton broth: both which Amelia immediately purchaſed.

As ſoon as the clock ſtruck ſeven, the good creature went down into the kitchen, and began to exerciſe her talents in cookery, of which ſhe was a great miſtreſs, as ſhe was of every œconomical office, from the higheſt to the loweſt; and as no woman could outſhine her in a drawing-room, ſo none could make the drawing-room itſelf ſhine brighter than Amelia. And if I may ſpeak a bold truth, I queſtion whether it be poſſible to view this fine creature in a more amiable light, than while ſhe was dreſſing her huſband's ſupper with her little children playing round her.

It was now half an hour paſt eight, and the meat almoſt ready, the table likewiſe neatly ſpread with materials borrowed from her landlady, and ſhe began to grow a little uneaſy at Booth's not returning; when a ſudden knock at the door rouzed her ſpirits, and ſhe cried---'There, my dear, there is your good papa!' at which words ſhe darted ſwiftly up ſtairs, and opened the door to her huſband.

She deſired her huſband to walk up into the dining-room, and ſhe would come to him in an inſtant; for ſhe was deſirous to increaſe his pleaſure, by ſurpriſing him with two favourite diſhes. She then went down again to the kitchen, where the maid of the houſe undertook to ſend up the ſupper, and ſhe with her children returned to Booth.

He then told her conciſely what had happened, with

relation

relation to the girl. To which she scarce made any answer; but asked him if he had not dined. He assured her he had not eat a morsel the whole day. 'Well,' says she, 'my dear, I am a fellow sufferer; 'but we shall enjoy our supper the more; for I have 'made a little provision for you, as I guessed what 'might be the case. I have got you a bottle of wine 'too. And here is a clean cloth and smiling countenance, my dear Will. Indeed, I am in unusual 'good spirits to-night, and I have made a promise to 'the children, which you must confirm; I have promised to let them sit up this one night to supper with 'us. Nay, do not look so serious; cast off all uneasy 'thoughts; I have a present for you here; no matter 'how I came by it.' At which words she put eight guineas into his hand, crying---'Come, my dear Bill, 'be gay. Fortune will yet be kind to us; at least, let 'us be happy this night. Indeed, the pleasures of 'many women, during their whole lives, will not 'amount to my happiness this night, if you will be in 'good humour.'

Booth fetched a deep sigh, and cried---'How unhappy 'am I, my dear, that I cannot sup with you to 'night!'

As in the delightful month of June, when the sky is all serene, and the whole face of nature looks with a pleasing and smiling aspect, suddenly a dark cloud spreads itself over the hemisphere, the sun vanishes from our sight, and every object is obscured by a dark and horrid gloom; so happened it to Amelia: the joy that enlightened every feature disappeared in a moment; the lustre forsook her shining eyes: and all the little loves that played and wantoned in her cheeks, hung their drooping heads; and with a faint trembling voice, she repeated her husband's words---'Not sup 'with me to night, my dear!'

'Indeed, my dear,' answered he, 'I cannot. I need 'not tell you how uneasy it makes me, or that I am as 'much disappointed as yourself; but I am engaged to

'sup abroad. I have absolutely given my honour; 'and besides, it is on business of importance.'

'My dear,' said she, 'I say no more. I am con- 'vinced you would not willingly sup from me. I own, 'it is a very particular disappointment to me to-night, 'when I had purposed unusual pleasure; but the same 'reason which is sufficient to you, ought to be so 'to me.'

Booth made his wife a compliment on her ready compliance; and then asked what she intended by giving him that money, or how she came by it.

'I intend, my dear,' said she, 'to give to you, that 'is all. As to the manner in which I came by it, you 'know, Billy, that is not very material. You are well 'assured I got it by no means that would displease you; 'and, perhaps, another time I may tell you.'

Booth asked no farther questions; but he returned it her, and insisted on her taking all but one guinea, saying she was the safest treasurer. He then promised her to make all the haste home in his power: and he hoped, he said, to be with her in an hour and a half at farthest, and then took his leave.

When he was gone, the poor disappointed Amelia sat down to supper with her children; with whose company she was forced to console herself for the absence of her husband.

## CHAP. IX.

### *A very Tragic Scene.*

THE clock had struck eleven, and Amelia was just proceeding to put her children to bed, when she heard a knock at the street-door. Upon which the boy cried out---'There is papa, mamma; pray let me stay 'and see him before I go to bed.' This was a favour very easily obtained; for Amelia instantly ran down stairs, exulting in the goodness of her husband for returning so soon, though half an hour was already elapsed beyond the time in which he promised to return.

Poor Amelia was now again disappointed; for it was

was not her husband at the door, but a servant with a letter for him, which he delivered into her hands. She immediately returned up stairs, and said---'It is 'not your papa, my dear; but I hope it is one who 'hath brought us some good news.' For Booth had told her, that he hourly expected to receive such from the great man, and had desired her to open any letter which came to him in his absence.

Amelia, therefore, broke open the letter, and read as follows---

'SIR,

'AFTER what hath passed between us, I need only 'tell you that I know you supped this very night 'alone with Miss Matthews: a fact, which will upbraid 'you sufficiently, without putting me to that trouble, 'and will very well account for my desiring the favour 'of seeing you to-morrow in Hyde Park, at six in the 'morning. You will forgive my reminding you, once 'more, how inexcusable this behaviour is in you, who 'are possessed in your own wife of the most inestimable 'jewel. Yours, &c.

'T. JAMES,'

'I shall bring pistols with me.'

It is not easy to describe the agitation of Amelia's mind when she read this letter. She threw herself into her chair, turned as pale as death, began to tremble all over, and had just power enough left to tap the bottle of wine, which she had hitherto preserved entire for her husband, and to drink off a large bumper.

The little boy perceived the strange symptoms which appeared in his mother; and running to her, he cried---'What is the matter, my dear mamma? you do not 'look well. No harm hath happened to poor papa, 'I hope. Sure that bad man hath not carried him 'away again.'

Amelia answered---'No, child, nothing, nothing at 'all.' And then a large shower of tears came to her assistance; which presently after produced the same in the eyes of both the children.

Amelia, after a ſhort ſilence, looking tenderly at her children, cried out---'It is too much, too much to 'bear! Why did I bring theſe little wretches into the 'world! why were theſe innocents born to ſuch a 'fate!' She then threw her arms round them both, (for they were before embracing her knees) and cried--- 'O my children! my children! forgive me, my babes. 'Forgive me that I have brought you into ſuch a world 'as this. You are undone; my children are undone!'

The little boy anſwered with great ſpirit---'How un- 'done, mamma? my ſiſter and I don't care a farthing for 'being undone. Do not cry ſo upon our account, we 'are both very well; indeed we are. But do pray 'tell us: I am ſure ſome accident hath happened to 'poor papa!'

'Mention him no more,' cries Amelia; 'your 'papa is---indeed he is a wicked man; he cares not 'not for any of us.---O heavens, is this the happineſs 'I promiſed myſelf this evening!' At which words ſhe fell into an agony, holding both her children in her arms.

The maid of the houſe now entered the room, with a letter in her hand, which ſhe had received from a por- ter, whoſe arrival the reader will not wonder to have been unheard by Amelia in her preſent condition.

The maid, upon her entrance into the room, perceiv- ing the ſituation of Amelia, cried out---'Good heavens! 'Madam, what is the matter!' Upon which, Amelia, who had a little recovered herſelf after the laſt violent vent of her paſſion, ſtarted up, and cried---'Nothing, Mrs. 'Suſan, nothing extraordinary. I am ſubject to theſe 'fits ſometimes; but I am very well now. Come, my 'dear children, I am very well again; indeed I am. 'You muſt now go to bed; Mrs. Suſan will be ſo good 'as to put you to bed.'

'But why doth not papa love us?' cries the little boy: 'I am ſure, we have none of us done any thing 'to diſoblige him.'

This innocent queſtion of the child ſo ſtung Amelia,

that

that she had the utmost difficulty to prevent a relapse. However, she took another dram of wine; for so it might be called to her, who was the most temperate of women, and never exceeded three glasses on any occasion. In this glass she drank her children's health, and soon after so well soothed and composed them, that they went quietly away with Mrs. Susan.

The maid, in the shock she had conceived at the melancholy, indeed frightful scene, which had presented itself to her at her first coming into the room, had quite forgot the letter, which she had held in her hand. However, just at her departure, she recollected it, and delivered it to Amelia! who was no sooner alone, than she opened it, and read as follows---

'MY DEAR SWEETEST LOVE,

'I Write this from the bailiff's house, where I was 'formerly, and to which I am again brought at 'the suit of that villain Trent. I have the misfortune 'to think I owe this accident (I mean, that it happened 'to-night) to my own folly, in endeavouring to keep a 'secret from you. O, my dear, had I had resolution to 'confess my crime to you, your forgiveness would, I 'am convinced, have cost me only a few blushes, and 'I had now been happy in your arms. Fool that I 'was, to leave you on such an account, and to add to 'a former transgression a new one. Yet, by heavens, 'I mean not a transgression of the like kind; for of 'that I am not, nor ever will be guilty: and when 'you know the true reason of my leaving you to-night, 'I think you will pity rather than upbraid me. I am 'sure you would, if you knew the compunction with 'which I left you, to go to the most worthless, the 'most infamous---Do guess the rest---Guess that crime 'with which I cannot stain my paper; but still believe 'me no more guilty than I am; or, if it will lessen 'your vexation at what hath befallen me, believe me 'as guilty as you please, and think me, for a while at 'least, as undeserving of you as I think myself. This 'paper and pen are so bad, I question whether you can

'read

'read what I write; I almoſt doubt whether I wiſh 'you ſhould. Yet this I will endeavour to make 'as legible as I can---Be comforted, my dear love, 'and ſtill keep up your ſpirits, with the hopes of 'better days. The doctor will be in town to-morrow, 'and I truſt in his goodneſs for my delivery once more 'from this place, and that I ſhall ſoon be able to repay 'him. That Heaven may bleſs and preſerve you, 'is the prayer of, my deareſt love, your ever fond, 'affectionate, and hereafter faithful huſband,

'W. BOOTH.'

Amelia pretty well gueſſed the obſcure meaning of this letter; which, though at another time it might have given her unſpeakable torment, was at preſent rather of the medicinal kind, and ſerved to allay her anguiſh. Her anger to Booth too began a little to abate, and was ſoftened by her concern for his misfortune. Upon the whole, however, ſhe paſſed a miſerable and ſleepleſs night, her gentle mind torn and diſtracted with various and contending paſſions, diſtreſſed with doubts, and wandering in a kind of twilight, which preſented her only objects of different degrees of horror, and where black deſpair cloſed at a ſmall diſtance the gloomy proſpect.

# BOOK XII.

## CHAP. I.

*The Book begins with polite Hiſtory.*

BEFORE we return to the miſerable couple, whom we left at the end of the laſt book, we will give our readers the more chearful view of the gay and happy family of Colonel James.

Mrs. James, when ſhe could not, as we have ſeen, prevail with Amelia to accept that invitation which, at the deſire of the colonel, ſhe had ſo kindly and obediently carried her, returned to her huſband, and acquainted him with the ill ſucceſs of her embaſſy; at which, to ſay the truth, ſhe was almoſt as much diſappointed

pointed as the colonel himſelf: for he had not taken a much ſtronger liking to Amelia, than ſhe herſelf had conceived for Booth. This will account for ſome paſſages, which may have a little ſurprized the reader in the former chapters of this hiſtory, as we were not then at leiſure to communicate to him a hint of this kind; it was, indeed, on Mr. Booth's account that ſhe had been at the trouble of changing her dreſs at the maſquerade.

But her paſſions of this ſort, happily for her, were not extremely ſtrong; ſhe was therefore eaſily baulked, and as ſhe met with no encouragement from Booth, ſhe ſoon gave way to the impetuoſity of Miſs Matthews; and from that time ſcarce thought more of the affair, till her huſband's deſign againſt the wife revived her's likewiſe; inſomuch, that her paſſion was, at this time, certainly ſtrong enough for Booth to produce a good hearty hatred for Amelia, whom ſhe now abuſed to the colonel in very groſs terms; both on the account of her poverty, and her inſolence: for ſo ſhe termed the refuſal of all her offers.

The colonel ſeeing no hopes of ſoon poſſeſſing his new miſtreſs, began, like a prudent and wiſe man, to turn his thoughts towards the ſecuring his old one. From what his wife had mentioned concerning the behaviour of the ſhepherdeſs, and particularly her preference of Booth, he had little doubt but that this was the identical Miſs Matthews. He reſolved therefore to watch her cloſely, in hopes of diſcovering Booth's intrigue with her. In this, beſides the remainder of affection which he yet preſerved for that lady, he had another view, as it would give him a fair pretence to quarrel with Booth; who, by carrying on this intrigue, would have broke his word and honour given to him. And he began now to hate poor Booth heartily, from the ſame reaſon from which Mrs. James had contracted her averſion to Amelia.

The colonel therefore employed an inferior kind of pimp to watch the lodgings of Miſs Matthews, and to acquaint

acquaint him if Booth, whoſe perſon was known to the pimp, made any viſit there.

The pimp faithfully performed his office, and having laſt night made the wiſhed-for diſcovery, immediately acquainted his maſter with it.

Upon this news, the colonel preſently diſpatched to Booth the ſhort note which we have before ſeen. He ſent it to his own houſe inſtead of Miſs Matthews's, with hopes of that very accident which actually did happen. Not that he had any ingredient of the bully in him, and deſired to be prevented from fighting, but with a proſpect of injuring Booth in the affection and eſteem of Amelia, and of recommending himſelf ſomewhat to her by appearing in the light of her champion; for which purpoſe he added that compliment to Amelia in his letter. He concluded, upon the whole, that if Booth himſelf opened the letter, he would certainly meet him the next morning; but if his wife ſhould open it before he came home, it might have the effects beforementioned; and for his future expoſtulation with Booth, it would not be in Amelia's power to prevent it.

Now it happened that this pimp had more maſters than one. Amongſt theſe was the worthy Mr. Trent, for whom he had often done buſineſs of the pimping vocation. He had been employed, indeed, in the ſervice of the great peer himſelf, under the direction of the ſaid Trent, and was the very perſon who had aſſiſted the ſaid Trent in dogging Booth and his wife to the opera-houſe on the maſquerade night.

This ſubaltern pimp was with his ſuperior, Trent, yeſterday morning, when he found a bailiff with him in order to receive his inſtructions for the arreſting Booth; when the bailiff ſaid it would be a very difficult matter to take him; for that, to his knowledge, he was as ſhy a cock as any in England. The ſubaltern immediately acquainted Trent with the buſineſs in which he was employed by the colonel. Upon which Trent enjoined him, the moment he had ſet him, to

give

give immediate notice to the bailiff; which he agreed to, and performed accordingly.

The bailiff, on receiving the note, immediately ſet out for his ſtand at an alehouſe within three doors of Miſs Matthews's lodging. At which, unfortunately for poor Booth, he arrived a very few minutes before Booth left that lady in order to return to Amelia.

Theſe were ſeveral matters, of which we thought neceſſary our reader ſhould be informed; for, beſides that it conduces greatly to a perfect underſtanding of all hiſtory, there is no exerciſe of the mind of a ſenſible reader more pleaſant, than the tracing of the ſeveral ſmall and almoſt imperceptible links in every chain of events, by which all the great actions of the world are produced. We will now, in the next chapter, proceed with our hiſtory.

## CHAP. II.

### *In which Amelia viſits her Huſband.*

AMELIA, after much anxious thinking, in which ſhe ſometimes flattered herſelf that her huſband was leſs guilty than ſhe had at firſt imagined him, and that he had ſome good excuſe to make for himſelf, (for, indeed, ſhe was not ſo able as willing to make one for him) at length reſolved to ſet out for the bailiff's caſtle. Having, therefore, ſtrictly recommended the care of her children to her good landlady, ſhe ſent for a hackney-coach, and ordered the coachman to drive to Gray's Inn Lane.

When ſhe came to the houſe, and aſked for the captain, the bailiff's wife, who came to the door, gueſſing, by the greatneſs of her beauty, and the diſorder of her dreſs, that ſhe was a young lady of pleaſure, anſwered, ſurlily---, Captain! 'I do not know of any captain that 'is here, not I.' For this good woman was, as well as Dame Purgante in Prior, a bitter enemy to all whores, eſpecially to thoſe of the handſome kind; for ſome ſuch ſhe ſuſpected to go ſhares with her in a certain property to which the law gave her the ſole right.

Amelia replied, ſhe was certain that Captain Booth was there.

there. 'Well, if he is ſo,' cries the bailiff's wife, 'you may come into the kitchen, if you will, and he 'ſhall be called down to you, if you have any buſineſs 'with him.' At the ſame time ſhe muttered ſomething to herſelf, and concluded a little more intelligibly, though ſtill in a muttering voice, that ſhe kept no ſuch houſe.

Amelia, whoſe innocence gave her no ſuſpicion of the true cauſe of this good woman's ſullenneſs, was frightened, and began to fear ſhe knew not what. At laſt ſhe made a ſhift to totter into the kitchen, when the miſtreſs of the houſe aſked her---'Well, Madam, who 'ſhall I tell the captain wants to ſpeak with him?'

'I aſk your pardon, Madam,' cries Amelia; 'in 'my confuſion, I really forgot you did not know me: 'tell him, if you pleaſe, that I am his wife.'

'And are you, indeed, his wife, Madam?' cries Mrs. Bailiff, a little ſoftened.

'Yes, indeed, and upon my honour,' anſwers Amelia.

'If this be the caſe,' cries the other, 'you may 'walk up ſtairs, if you pleaſe, Heaven forbid I ſhould 'part man and wife! Indeed, I think they can never 'be too much together. But I never will ſuffer any 'bad doings, in my houſe, nor any of the town ladies 'to come to gentlemen here.'

Amelia anſwered, that ſhe liked her the better; for, indeed, in her preſent diſpoſition, Amelia was as much exaſperated againſt wicked women as the virtuous miſtreſs of the houſe, or any other virtuous woman could be.

The bailiff's wife then uſhered Amelia up ſtairs, and having unlocked the priſoner's door, cried---'Cap-'tain, here is your lady, Sir, come to ſee you.' At which words, Booth ſtarted up from his chair, and caught Amelia in his arms, embracing her for a conſiderable time with ſo much rapture, that the bailiff's wife, who was an eye-witneſs of this violent fondneſs, began to ſuſpect whether Amelia had really told her truth.

truth. However, she had some little awe of the captain, and for fear of being in the wrong did not interfere, but shut the door, and turned the key.

When Booth found himself alone with his wife, and had vented the first violence of his rapture in kisses and embraces, he looked tenderly at her, and cried---'Is 'it possible, Amelia, is it possible you can have this 'goodness to follow such a wretch as me to such a 'place as this? or do you come to upbraid me with 'my guilt, and to sink me down to that perdition I so 'justly deserve?'

'Am I so given to upbraiding, then?' says she, in a gentle voice; 'have I ever given you occasion to think 'I would sink you to perdition?'

'Far be it from me, my love, to think so,' answered he. 'And yet you may forgive the utmost fears of an 'offending, penitent sinner. I know, indeed, the extent of your goodness, and yet I know my guilt so 'great------'

'Alas, Mr. Booth!' said she, 'what guilt is this 'which you mention, and which you writ to me of 'last night? Sure, by your mentioning to me so much, 'you intend to tell me more: nay, indeed, to tell me 'all, and not leave my mind open to suspicions, per'haps ten times worse than the truth.'

'Will you give me a patient hearing?' said he.

'I will, indeed,' answered she; 'nay, I am pre'pared to hear the worst you can unfold; nay, perhaps 'the worst is short of my apprehensions.'

Booth then, after a little farther apology, began and related to her the whole that had passed between him and Miss Matthews, from their first meeting in the prison, to their separation the preceding evening. All which, as the reader knows it already, it would be tedious and unpardonable to transcribe from his mouth. He told her likewise all that he had done and suffered, to conceal his transgression from her knowledge. This, he assured her, was the business of his visit last night;

the conſequence of which was, he declared in the moſt ſolemn manner, no other than an abſolute quarrel with Miſs Matthews, of whom he had taken a final leave.

When he had ended his narration, Amelia, after a ſhort ſilence, anſwered---'Indeed, I firmly believe every 'word you have ſaid; but I cannot now forgive you the 'fault you have confeſſed---and my reaſon is, becauſe 'I have forgiven it long ago. Here, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'is an inſtance that I am likewiſe capable of keeping a 'ſecret.' She then delivered her huſband a letter, which ſhe had ſome time ago received from Miſs Matthews, and which was the ſame which that lady had mentioned, and ſuppoſed, as Booth had never heard of it, that it had miſcarried; for ſhe ſent it by the penny-poſt. In this letter, which was ſigned by a feigned name, ſhe had acquainted Amelia with the infidelity of her huſband, and had beſides very greatly abuſed him; taxing him with many falſhoods; and, among the reſt, with having ſpoken very ſlightingly and diſreſpectfully of his wife.

Amelia never ſhined forth to Booth in ſo amiable and great a light; nor did his own unworthineſs ever appear to him ſo mean and contemptible, as at this inſtant. However, when he had read the letter, he uttered many violent proteſtations to her, that all which related to herſelf was abſolutely falſe.

'I am convinced it is,' ſaid ſhe. 'I would not 'have a ſuſpicion of the contrary for the world. I aſ-'ſure you, I had, till laſt night revived it in my me-'mory, almoſt forgot the letter; for, as I well knew 'from whom it came, by her mentioning obligations 'which ſhe had conferred on you, and which you had 'more than once ſpoken to me of, I made large allow-'ances for the ſituation you was then in; and I was 'the more ſatisfied, as the letter itſelf, as well as many 'other circumſtances, convinced me the affair was at 'an end.'

Booth now uttered the moſt extravagant expreſſions of admi-

admiration and fondneſs that his heart could dictate, and accompanied them with the warmeſt embraces. All which warmth and tenderneſs ſhe returned; and tears of love and joy ruſhed from both their eyes. So raviſhed, indeed, were their hearts, that for ſome time they both forgot the dreadful ſituation of their affairs.

This, however, was but a ſhort reverie. It ſoon recurred to Amelia, that though ſhe had the liberty of leaving that houſe when ſhe pleaſed, ſhe could not take her beloved huſband with her. This thought ſtung her tender boſom to the quick; and ſhe could not ſo far command herſelf, as to refrain from many ſorrowful exclamations againſt the hardſhip of their deſtiny; but when ſhe ſaw the effect they had upon Booth, ſhe ſtifled her riſing grief, forced a little chearfulneſs into her countenance, and exerting all the ſpirits ſhe could raiſe within herſelf, expreſſed her hopes of ſeeing a ſpeedy end to their ſufferings. She then aſked her huſband what ſhe ſhould do for him, and to whom ſhe ſhould apply for his deliverance.

'You know, my dear,' cries Booth, 'that the 'doctor is to be in town ſome time to-day. My hopes 'of immediate redemption are only in him; and if that 'can be obtained, I make no doubt but of the ſucceſs 'of that affair which is in the hands of a gentleman 'who hath faithfully promiſed, and in whoſe power I 'am ſo well aſſured it is, to ſerve me.'

Thus did this poor man ſupport his hopes by a dependance on that ticket which he had ſo dearly purchaſed of one who pretended to manage the wheels in the great ſtate-lottery of preferment. A lottery, indeed, which hath this to recommend it, that many poor wretches feed their imaginations with the proſpect of a prize during their whole lives, and never diſcover they have drawn a blank.

Amelia, who was of a pretty ſanguine temper, and was entirely ignorant of theſe matters, was full as eaſy to be deceived into hopes as her huſband; but in reality

at preſent ſhe turned her eyes to no diſtant proſpect, the deſire of regaining her huſband's liberty having engroſſed her whole mind.

While they were diſcourſing on theſe matters, they heard a violent noiſe in the houſe, and immediately after ſeveral perſons paſſed by their door up ſtairs to the apartment over their head. This greatly terrified the gentle ſpirit of Amelia, and ſhe cried---'Good Heavens! my dear, muſt I leave you in this horrid place! I am terrified with a thouſand fears concerning you!'

Booth endeavoured to comfort her; ſaying, that he was in no manner of danger, and that he doubted not but that the doctor would ſoon be with him. 'And ſtay, my dear,' cries he; 'now I recollect, ſuppoſe you ſhould apply to my old friend James; for I believe you are pretty well ſatisfied that your apprehenſions of him were groundleſs. I have no reaſon to think but that he would be as ready to ſerve me as formerly.'

Amelia turned as pale as aſhes at the name of James; and, inſtead of making a direct anſwer to her huſband, ſhe laid hold of him, and cried---'My dear, I have one favour to beg of you, and I inſiſt on your granting it me.'

Booth readily ſwore he would deny her nothing.

'It is only this, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'that, if that deteſted colonel comes, you will not ſee him. Let the people of the houſe tell him you are not here.'

'He knows nothing of my being here,' anſwered Booth; 'but why ſhould I refuſe to ſee him, if he ſhould be kind enough to come hither to me? Indeed, my Amelia, you have taken a diſlike to that man without ſufficient reaſon.'

'I ſpeak not upon that account,' cries Amelia; 'but I have had dreams laſt night about you two. Perhaps you will laugh at my folly; but pray indulge it. Nay, I inſiſt on your promiſe of not denying it me.'

'Dreams,

'Dreams, my dear creature!' anſwered he: 'what 'dream can you have had of us!'

'One too horrible to be mentioned,' replied ſhe. 'I cannot think of it without horror; and, unleſs you 'will promiſe me not to ſee the colonel till I return, 'I 'poſitively will never leave you.'

'Indeed, my Amelia,' ſaid Booth, 'I never knew 'you unreaſonable before. How can a woman of your 'ſenſe talk of dreams?'

'Suffer me to be once at leaſt unreaſonable,' ſaid Amelia; 'as you are ſo good natured to ſay I am not 'often ſo. Conſider what I have lately ſuffered, and 'how weak my ſpirits muſt be at this time.'

As Booth was going to ſpeak, the bailiff without any ceremony entered the room, and cried—'No of-'fence, I hope, Madam; my wife, it ſeems, did not 'know you. She thought the captain had a mind for 'a bit of fleſh by the bye. But I have quieted all 'matters: for I know you very well; I have ſeen that 'handſome face many a time when I have been wait-'ing upon the captain formerly. No offence, I hope, 'Madam; but if my wife was as handſome as you are, 'I ſhould not look for worſe goods abroad.'

Booth conceived ſome diſpleaſure at this ſpeech; but he did not think proper to expreſs more than a '*Piſh!*' And then aſked the bailiff what was the meaning of the noiſe they heard juſt now.

'I know of no noiſe,' anſwered the bailiff. 'Some 'of my men have been carrying a piece of bad luggage 'up ſtairs; a poor raſcal that reſiſted the law and juſ-'tice; ſo I gave him a cut or two with a hanger. If 'they ſhould prove mortal, he muſt thank himſelf for 'it. If a man will not behave like a gentleman to an 'officer, he muſt take the conſequence: but I muſt 'ſay that for you, captain, you behave yourſelf like a 'gentleman, and therefore I ſhall always uſe you as 'ſuch; and I hope you will find bail ſoon, with all 'my heart. This is but a paultry ſum to what the

'laſt was; and I do aſſure you there is nothing elſe 'againſt you in the office.'

The latter part of the bailiff's ſpeech ſomewhat comforted Amelia, who had been a little frightened by the former; and ſhe ſoon after took leave of her huſband, to go in queſt of the doctor; who, as Amelia had heard that morning, was expected in town that very day, which was ſomewhat ſooner than he intended at his departure.

Before ſhe went, however, ſhe left a ſtrict charge with the bailiff, who uſhered her very civilly down ſtairs, that if one Colonel James came there to enquire for her huſband, he ſhould deny that he was there.

She then departed; and the bailiff immediately gave a very ſtrict charge to his wife, his maid, and his followers, that if one Colonel James, or any one from him, ſhould enquire after the captain, they ſhould let him know he had the captain above ſtairs; for he doubted not but that the colonel was one of Booth's creditors; and he hoped for a ſecond bail-bond by his means.

## CHAP. III.

*Containing Matter pertinent to the Hiſtory.*

AMELIA, in her way to the doctor's, determined juſt to ſtop at her own lodgings, which lay a little out of the road, and to pay a momentary viſit to her children.

This was fortunate enough; for had ſhe called at the doctor's houſe, ſhe would have heard nothing of him, which would have cauſed in her ſome alarm and diſappointment; for the doctor was ſet down at Mrs. Atkinſon's, where he was directed to Amelia's lodgings, to which he went before he called at his own; and here Amelia now found him playing with her two children.

The doctor had been a little ſurprized at not finding Amelia at home, nor any one that could give an account of her. He was now more ſurprized to ſee her come

come in ſuch a dreſs, and at the diſorder which he very plainly perceived in her pale and melancholy countenance. He addreſſed her firſt, (for, indeed, ſhe was in no great haſte to ſpeak) and cried---'My dear child, what is the matter? where is your huſband? 'Some miſchief, I am afraid, hath happened to him in 'my abſence.'

'Oh, my dear doctor!' anſwered Amelia, 'ſure 'ſome good angel hath ſent you hither. My poor 'Will is arreſted again. I left him in the moſt miſe-'rable condition in the very houſe where your goodneſs 'formerly relieved him.'

'Arreſted!' cries the doctor. 'Then it muſt be for 'ſome very inconſiderable trifle.'

'I wiſh it was,' ſaid Amelia; 'but it is for no leſs 'than fifty pounds.'

'Then,' cries the doctor, 'he hath been diſingenuous with me. He told me he did not owe ten 'pounds in the world for which he was liable to be 'ſued.'

'I know not what to ſay,' cries Amelia. 'Indeed, 'I am afraid to tell you the truth.'

'How, child!' ſaid the doctor; 'I hope you will 'never diſguiſe it to any one, eſpecially to me. Any 'prevarication, I promiſe you, will forfeit my friend-'ſhip for ever.'

'I will tell you the whole,' cries Amelia, 'and rely 'entirely on your goodneſs.' She then related the gaming ſtory, not forgetting to ſet in the fulleſt light, and to lay the ſtrongeſt emphaſis on, his promiſe never to play again.

The doctor fetched a deep ſigh when he had heard Amelia's relation, and cried---'I am ſorry, child, for 'the ſhare you are to partake in your huſband's ſuffer-'ings! but as for him, I really think he deſerves no 'compaſſion. You ſay, he hath promiſed never to 'play again; but I muſt tell you, he hath broken his 'promiſe to me already; for I had heard he was for-

'merly

'merly addicted to this vice, and had given him ſuffi-
'cient caution againſt it. You will conſider, child,
'I am already pretty largely engaged for him; every
'farthing of which I am ſenſible I muſt pay. You
'know I would go to the utmoſt verge of prudence to
'ſerve you; but I muſt not exceed my ability, which
'is not very great; and I have ſeveral families on my
'hands, who are by misfortune alone brought to want.
'I do aſſure you, I cannot at preſent anſwer for ſuch
'a ſum as this, without diſtreſſing my own circum-
'ſtances.'

'Then Heaven have mercy upon us all!' cries Amelia; 'for we have no other friend on earth! My 'huſband is undone; and theſe poor little wretches muſt 'be ſtarved!'

The doctor caſt his eyes on the children, and then cried---'I hope not ſo. I told you I muſt diſtreſs my 'circumſtances, and I will diſtreſs them this once on 'your account, and on the account of theſe poor little 'babes. But things muſt not go on any longer in this 'way. You muſt take an heroic reſolution. I will 'hire a coach for you to-morrow morning, which ſhall 'carry you all down to my parſonage-houſe. There 'you ſhall have my protection till ſomething can be 'done for your huſband; of which, to be plain with 'you, I at preſent ſee no likelihood.'

Amelia fell upon her knees in an extaſy of thankſ-giving to the doctor, who immediately raiſed her up, and placed her in the chair. She then recollected her-ſelf, and ſaid---'Oh! my worthy friend, I have ſtill 'another matter to mention to you, in which I muſt 'have both your advice and aſſiſtance. My ſoul bluſhes 'to give you all this trouble; but what other friend 'have I? indeed, what other friend could I apply to 'ſo properly on ſuch an occaſion?'

The doctor, with a very kind voice and countenance, deſired her to ſpeak. She then ſaid---'Oh, Sir! that 'wicked colonel, whom I have mentioned to you for-

'merly,

'merly, hath picked ſome quarrel with my huſband, (for ſhe did not think proper to mention the cauſe) 'and hath ſent him a challenge. It came to my hand 'laſt night, after he was arreſted; I opened and read 'it.'

'Give it me, child,' ſaid the doctor.

She anſwered, ſhe had burned it, as was indeed true. 'But I remember it was an appointment to meet at 'ſword and piſtol, this morning in Hyde Park.'

'Make yourſelf eaſy, my dear child,' cries the doctor. 'I will take care to prevent any miſchief.'

'But conſider, my dear Sir,' ſaid ſhe, this is a tender 'matter. My huſband's honour is to be preſerved as 'well as his life.'

'And ſo is his ſoul, which ought to be the deareſt of 'all things,' cries the doctor. 'Honour! nonſenſe. 'Can honour dictate to him to diſobey the expreſs 'commands of his Maker, in compliance with a cuſtom 'eſtabliſhed by a ſet of blockheads, founded on falſe 'principles of virtue, in direct oppoſition to the plain 'and poſitive precepts of religion, and tending mani-'feſtly to give a ſanction to ruffians, and protect them 'in all the ways of impudence and villainy?'

'All this, I believe, is very true,' cries Amelia; 'but yet you know, doctor, the opinion of the 'world.'

'You talk ſimply, child,' cries the doctor. 'What 'is the opinion of the world, oppoſed to religion and 'virtue! But you are in the wrong. It is not the 'opinion of the world; it is the opinion of the idle, ig-'norant, and profligate. It is impoſſible it ſhould be 'the opinion of one man of ſenſe, who is in earneſt in 'his belief of our religion. Chiefly, indeed, it hath 'been upheld by the nonſenſe of women; who, either 'from their extreme cowardice, and deſire of protec-'tion---or, as Mr. Bayle thinks, from their exceſſive 'vanity, have been always forward to countenance a 'ſet of hectors and bravoes, and to deſpiſe all men of

'modeſty

'modeſty and ſobriety; though theſe are often, at the 'bottom, not only the better, but the braver men.

'You know, doctor,' cries Amelia, 'I have never 'preſumed to argue with you; your opinion is to me 'always inſtruction, and your word a law.'

'Indeed, child,' cries the doctor, 'I know you are 'a good woman; and yet I muſt obſerve to you, that 'this very deſire of feeding the paſſion of female vanity 'with the heroiſm of her man, old Homer ſeems to 'make the characteriſtic of a bad and looſe woman. 'He introduces Helen upbraiding her gallant with 'having quitted the fight, and left the victory to Me-'nelaus; and ſeeming to be ſorry that ſhe had left her 'huſband, only becauſe he was the better dueliſt of 'the two: but in how different a light doth he repre-'ſent the tender and chaſte love of Andromache to her 'worthy Hector! ſhe diſſuades him from expoſing him-'ſelf to danger, even in a juſt cauſe. This is, indeed, 'a weakneſs; but it is an amiable one, and becoming 'a true feminine character: but a woman, who out of 'heroic vanity (for ſo it is) would hazard not only the 'life, but the ſoul too, of her huſband in a duel, is a 'monſter, and ought to be painted in no other charac-'ter than that of a fury.'

'I aſſure you, doctor,' cries Amelia, 'I never ſaw 'this matter in the odious light, in which you have 'truly repreſented it, before. I am aſhamed to recollect 'what I have formerly ſaid on this ſubject. And yet, 'whilſt the opinion of the world is as it is, one would 'wiſh to comply as far as poſſible, eſpecially as my 'huſband is an officer of the army. If it can be done, 'therefore with ſafety to his honour------'

'Again honour;' cries the doctor. 'Indeed I will not 'ſuffer that noble word to be ſo baſely and barbarouſly 'proſtituted. I have known ſome of theſe men of 'honour, as they call themſelves, to be the moſt arrant 'raſcals in the univerſe.'

'Well, I aſk your pardon,' ſaid ſhe. 'Reputation,

'then,

'then, if you pleaſe, or any other word you like bet-
'ter; you know my meaning very well.'

'I do know your meaning,' cries the doctor; 'and
'Virgil knew it a great while ago. The next time
'you ſee your friend Mrs. Atkinſon, aſk her what it
'was made Dido fall in love with Æneas.'

'Nay, dear Sir,' ſaid Amelia, 'do not railly me ſo
'unmercifully; think where my poor huſband is now.'

'He is,' anſwered the doctor, 'where I will pre-
'ſently be with him. In the mean time do you pack
'up every thing in order for your journey to-morrow;
'for, if you are wiſe, you will not truſt your huſband
'a day longer in this town; therefore to packing.'

Amelia promiſed ſhe would, though indeed ſhe wanted not any warning for her journey on this account; for when ſhe packed up herſelf in the coach, ſhe packed up her all. However, ſhe did not think proper to mention this to the doctor; for as he was now in pretty good humour, ſhe did not care to venture again diſcompoſing his temper.

The doctor then ſat out for Gray's Inn Lane; and, as ſoon as he was gone, Amelia began to conſider of her incapacity to take a journey in her preſent ſituation, without even a clean ſhift. At laſt ſhe reſolved, as ſhe was poſſeſſed of ſeven guineas and a half, to go to her friend and redeem ſome of her own and her huſband's linen out of captivity; indeed, juſt ſo much as would render it barely poſſible for them to go out of town with any decency. And this reſolution ſhe immediately executed.

As ſoon as ſhe had finiſhed her buſineſs with the pawnbroker, (if a man who lends under thirty per cent. deſerves that name) he ſaid to her---'Pray,
'Madam, did you know that man that was here
'yeſterday, when you brought the picture?' Amelia anſwered in the negative. 'Indeed, Madam,' ſaid the broker, 'he knows you, though he did not recollect
'you while you was here, as your hood was drawn

'over

'over your face; but the moment you was gone, he 'begged to look at the picture, which I, thinking no 'harm, permitted. He had ſcarce looked upon it, 'when he cried out---"By heaven and earth, it is her "picture!" He then aſked me if I knew you. "In-"deed," ſaid I, "I never ſaw the lady before."

In this laſt particular, however, the pawnbroker a little ſavoured of his profeſſion, and made a ſmall deviation from the truth: for when the man had aſked him if he knew the lady, he anſwered ſhe was ſome poor undone woman, who had pawned all her clothes to him the day before: 'And I ſuppoſe,' ſays he, 'this 'picture is the laſt of her goods and chattels.' This hint we thought proper to give the reader, as it may chance to be material.

Amelia anſwered coldly, that ſhe had taken ſo very little notice of the man, that ſhe ſcarce remembered he was there.

'I aſſure you, Madam,' ſays the pawnbroker, 'he 'hath taken very great notice of you; for the man 'changed countenance upon what I ſaid, and preſently 'after begged me to give him a dram.---"Oho" thinks I to myſelf, "are you thereabouts! I would not be ſo "much in love with ſome folks, as ſome people are, "for more intereſt than I ſhall ever make of a thouſand "pounds."

Amelia bluſhed, and ſaid with ſome peeviſhneſs, that ſhe knew nothing of the man; but ſuppoſed he was ſome impertinent fellow or other.

'Nay, Madam,' anſwered the pawnbroker, 'I aſſure 'you he is not worthy your regard. He is a poor 'wretch, and I believe I am poſſeſſed of moſt of his 'moveables. However, I hope you are not offended; 'for, indeed, he ſaid no harm; but he was very 'ſtrangely diſordered, that is the truth of it.'

Amelia was very deſirous of putting an end to this converſation, and altogether as eager to return to her children; ſhe therefore bundled up her things as faſt as

ſhe

ſhe could, and calling for a hackney coach, directed the coachman to her lodgings, and bid him drive her home with all the haſte he could.

## CHAP IV.

*In which Dr. Harriſon viſits Colonel James.*

THE Doctor, when he left Amelia, intended to go directly to Booth; but he preſently changed his mind, and determined firſt to call on the colonel, as he thought it was proper to put an end to that matter, before he gave Booth his liberty.

The doctor found the two colonels, James and Bath together. They both received him very civilly: for James was a very well bred man; and Bath always ſhewed a particular reſpect for the clergy, he being indeed a perfect good chriſtian, except in the articles or fighting and ſwearing.

Our divine ſat ſome time without mentioning the ſubject of his errand, in hopes that Bath would go away; but when he found no likelihood of that, (for indeed Bath was of the two much the moſt pleaſed with his company) he told James that he had ſomething to ſay to him relating to Mr. Booth, which he believed he might ſpeak before his brother.

'Undoubtedly, Sir,' ſaid James, 'for there can be 'no ſecrets between us which my brother may not 'hear.'

'I come then to you, Sir,' ſaid the doctor, 'from 'the moſt unhappy woman in the world, to whoſe 'afflictions you have very greatly and cruelly added, by 'ſending a challenge to her huſband, which hath very 'luckily fallen into her hands; for had the man for 'whom you deſigned it, received it, I am afraid you 'would not have ſeen me upon this occaſion.'

'If I writ ſuch a letter to Mr. Booth, Sir,' ſaid James, 'you may be aſſured I did not expect this viſit 'in anſwer to it.'

'I do not think you did,' cries the doctor; 'but you 'have great reaſon to thank Heaven for ordering this

'matter contrary to your expectations. I know not 'what trifle may have drawn this challenge from you; 'but, after what I have ſome reaſon to know of you, 'Sir, I muſt plainly tell you, that if you had added 'to your guilt already committed againſt this man, 'that of having his blood upon your hands, your ſoul 'would have become as black as hell itſelf.'

'Give me leave to ſay,' cries the colonel, 'this is a 'language which I am not uſed to hear; and if your 'cloth was not your protection, you ſhould not give it 'me with impunity. After what you know of me, Sir! 'What do you preſume to know of me to my diſad-'vantage?'

'You ſay my cloth is my protection, colonel,' an-ſwered the doctor, 'therefore pray lay aſide your 'anger; I do not come with any deſign of affronting or 'offending you.'

'Very well,' cries Bath, 'that declaration is ſuffi-'cient from a clergyman, let him ſay what he pleaſes.'

'Indeed, Sir,' ſays the Doctor, very mildly, 'I con-'ſult equally the good of you both; and, in a ſpiritual 'ſenſe, more eſpecially yours; for you know you have 'injured this poor man.'

'So far on the contrary,' cries James, that I have 'been his greateſt benefactor; I ſcorn to upbraid him; 'but you force me to it. Nor have I ever done him the 'leaſt injury.'

'Perhaps not,' ſaid the doctor; 'I will alter what 'I have ſaid. But for this I apply to your honour. 'Have you not intended him an injury, the very inten-'tion of which cancels every obligation?'

'How, Sir?' anſwered the colonel. 'What do you 'mean?'

'My meaning,' replied the doctor, 'is almoſt too 'tender to mention. Come, colonel, examine your own 'heart; and then anſwer me on your honour if you 'have not intended to do him the higheſt wrong which 'one man can do another?'

'I do

'I do not know what you mean by the queſtion,' anſwered the colonel.

'D---n me, the queſtion is very tranſparent,' cries Bath. 'From any other man, it would be an affront 'with the ſtrongeſt emphaſis, but from one of the 'doctor's cloth, it demands a categorical anſwer.'

'I am not a papiſt, Sir,' anſwered colonel James, 'nor am I obliged to confeſs to my prieſt. But if you 'have any thing to ſay, ſpeak openly; for I do not 'underſtand your meaning.'

'I have explained my meaning to you already,' ſaid the doctor, 'in a letter I wrote to you on the ſubject; a 'ſubject which I am ſorry I ſhould have any occaſion 'to write upon to a chriſtian.'

'I do remember now,' cries the colonel, 'that I 'received a very impertinent letter, ſomething like a 'ſermon againſt adultery; but I did not expect to hear 'the author own it to my face.'

'That brave man then, Sir,' anſwered the doctor, 'ſtands before you, who dares own he wrote that letter, 'and dares affirm too, that it was writ on a juſt and 'ſtrong foundation. But if the hardneſs of your heart 'could prevail on you to treat my good intention with 'contempt and ſcorn; what, pray, could induce you to 'ſhew it, nay, to give it Mr. Booth? What motive 'could you have for that, unleſs you meant to inſult 'him, and to provoke your rival to give you that 'opportunity of putting him out of the world which 'you have ſince wickedly ſought by your challenge?'

'I give him the letter!' ſaid the colonel.

'Yes, Sir,' anſwered the doctor, 'he ſhewed me the 'letter, and affirmed that you gave it him at the maſque-'rade.'

'He is a lying raſcal then,' ſaid the colonel very paſſionately. 'I ſcarce took the trouble of reading the 'letter, and loſt it out of my pocket.'

Here Bath interfered, and explained this affair in the manner in which it happened, and with which the rea-

der is already acquainted. He concluded by great eulogiums on the performance, and declared it was one of the moſt *enthuſiaſtic* (meaning, perhaps, *eccleſiaſtic*) letters that was ever written. 'And d---n me,' ſays he, 'if I do not reſpect the author with the utmoſt 'emphaſis of thinking.'

The doctor now recollected what had paſſed with Booth, and perceived he had made a miſtake of one colonel for another. This he preſently acknowledged to Colonel James, and ſaid the miſtake had been his, and not Booth's.

Bath now collected all his gravity and dignity, as he called it, into his countenance, and addreſſing himſelf to James, ſaid---'And was that letter writ to you, 'brother? I hope you never deſerved any ſuſpicion of 'this kind.'

'Brother,' cries James, 'I am accountable to myſelf 'for my actions, and ſhall not render an account either 'to you, or that gentleman.'

'As to me, brother,' anſwered Bath, 'you ſay 'right: but I think this gentleman may call you to an 'account; nay, I think it is his duty ſo to do. And 'let me tell you, brother, there is one much greater than 'he to whom you muſt give an account. Mrs. Booth 'is really a fine woman, a lady of moſt *imperious* and 'majeſtic preſence. I have heard you often ſay, that 'you liked her; and if you have quarrelled with her 'huſband upon this account, by all the dignity of man, 'I think you ought to aſk his pardon.'

'Indeed, brother,' cries James, 'I can bear this no 'longer; you will make me angry preſently.'

'Angry, brother James!' cries Bath; 'angry---I 'love you, brother, and have obligations to you. I 'will ſay no more; but I hope you know I do not fear 'making any man angry.'

James anſwered, he knew it well: and then the doctor apprehending that while he was ſtopping up one breach, he ſhould make another, preſently interfered,

and

and turned the discourse back to Booth. 'You tell me, 'Sir,' said he to James, 'that my gown is my protec- 'tion; let it then at least protect me where I have had 'no design in offending; where I have consulted your 'highest welfare, as in truth I did in writing this letter. 'And if you did not in the least deserve any such suspi- 'cion, still you have no cause for resentment. Caution 'against sin, even to the innocent, can never be unwhole- 'some. But this, I assure you, whatever anger you 'have to me, you can have none to poor Booth, who 'was entirely ignorant of my writing to you, and who, 'I am certain, never entertained the least suspicion of 'you; on the contrary, reveres you with the highest 'esteem, and love and gratitude. Let me, therefore 'reconcile all matters between you, and bring you 'together, before he hath even heard of this chal- 'lenge.'

'Brother,' cries Bath, 'I hope I shall not make you 'angry---I lye when I say so; for I am indifferent to 'any man's anger.---Let me be an accessary to what 'the doctor hath said. I think I may be trusted with 'matters of this nature; and it is a little unkind that, 'if you intended to send a challenge, you did not make 'me the bearer. But, indeed, as to what appears to 'me, this matter may be very well made up; and as 'Mr. Booth did not know of the challenge, I do not 'see why he ever should, any more than your giving him 'the lye just now; but that he shall never have from 'me, nor, I believe, from this gentleman; for, 'indeed, if he should, it would be incumbent upon him 'to cut your throat.'

'Look'e, doctor,' said James, 'I do not deserve the 'unkind suspicion you just now threw out against me. 'I never thirsted after any man's blood; and as for 'what hath passed, since this discovery hath happened, 'I may perhaps not think it worth my while to 'trouble myself any more about it.'

The doctor was not contented with *perhaps*; he

inſiſted on a firm promiſe, to be bound with the colonel's honour. This at length he obtained, and then departed well ſatisfied.

In fact, the colonel was aſhamed to avow the real cauſe of the quarrel to this good man, or indeed to his brother Bath, who would not only have condemned him equally with the doctor, but would poſſibly have quarrelled with him on his ſiſter's account; whom, as the reader muſt have obſerved, he loved above all things: and in plain truth, though the colonel was a brave man, and dared to fight, yet he was altogether as willing to let it alone; and this made him now and then give a little way to the wrong-headedneſs of Colonel Bath, who, with all the other principles of honour and humanity, made no more of cutting the throat of a man upon any of his punctilios, than a butcher doth of killing ſheep.

## CHAP. V.

### *What paſſed at the Bailiff's Houſe.*

THE doctor now ſet forwards to his friend Booth, and as he paſſed by the door of his attorney in the way, he called upon him, and took him with him.

The meeting between him and Booth need not be expatiated upon. The doctor was really angry, and though he deferred his lecture to a more proper opportunity, yet, as he was no diſſembler, (indeed he was incapable of any diſguiſe) he could not put on a ſhow of that heartineſs with which he had formerly uſed to receive his friend.

Booth at laſt began himſelf in the following manner---'Doctor, I am really aſhamed to ſee you; and if 'you knew the confuſion of my ſoul on this occaſion, I 'am ſure you would pity rather than upbraid me. 'And yet I can ſay, with great ſincerity, I rejoice in 'this laſt inſtance of my ſhame, ſince I am like to 'reap the moſt ſolid advantage from it.' The doctor ſtared at this, and Booth thus proceeded---'Since I 'have been in this wretched place, I have employed

'my

'my time almoſt entirely in reading over a ſeries of 'ſermons, which are contained in that book,' (meaning Dr. Barrow's works, which then lay on the table before him) 'in proof of the Chriſtian religion; and ſo good 'an effect have they had upon me, that I ſhall, I 'believe, be the better man for them as long as I 'live. I have not a doubt, (for I own I have had 'ſuch) which remains now unſatisfied. If ever an 'angel might be thought to guide the pen of a writer, 'ſurely the pen of that great and good man had ſuch an 'aſſiſtant.' The doctor readily concurred in the praiſes of Dr. Barrow, and added---'You ſay, you have had 'your doubts, young gentleman; indeed, I did not 'know that: and pray what were your doubts?'--- 'Whatever they were, Sir,' ſaid Booth, 'they are now 'ſatisfied, as I believe thoſe of every impartial and ſen- 'ſible reader will be, if he will with due attention read 'over theſe excellent ſermons.'---'Very well,' anſwered the doctor: 'though I have converſed, I find, with a 'falſe brother hitherto, I am glad you are reconciled 'to truth at laſt, and I hope your future faith will 'have ſome influence on your future life.'---'I need 'not tell you, Sir,' replied Booth, 'that will always be 'the caſe, where faith is ſincere, as I aſſure you mine 'is. Indeed, I never was a raſh diſbeliever; my chief 'doubt was founded on this, that as men appeared to 'me to act entirely from their paſſions, their actions 'could have neither merit nor demerit.'---'A very wor- 'thy concluſion truly!' cries the doctor; 'but if men act, 'as I believe they do, from their paſſions, it would be 'fair to conclude that religion to be true, which 'applies immediately to the ſtrongeſt of theſe paſſions, 'hope and fear; chuſing rather to rely on its rewards 'and puniſhments, than on that native beauty of virtue 'which ſome of the ancient philoſophers thought pro- 'per to recommend to their diſciples. But we will 'defer this diſcourſe till another opportunity; at pre- 'ſent, as the devil hath thought proper to ſet you free,

'I will

'I will try if I can prevail on the bailiff to do the 'ſame.'

The doctor had really not ſo much money in town as Booth's debt amounted to; and therefore, though he would otherwiſe very willingly have paid it, he was forced to give bail for the action. For which purpoſe, as the bailiff was a man of great form, he was obliged to get another perſon to be bound with him. This perſon, however, the attorney undertook to procure, and immediately ſet out in queſt of him.

During his abſence the bailiff came into the room, and addreſſing himſelf to the doctor, ſaid---'I think, 'Sir, your name is Dr. Harriſon.' The doctor immediately acknowledged his name. Indeed, the bailiff had ſeen it to a bail bond before. 'Why then, Sir,' ſaid the bailiff, 'there is a man above in a dying condition, 'that deſires the favour of ſpeaking to you; I believe 'he wants you to pray by him.'

The bailiff himſelf was not more ready to execute his office on all occaſions for his fee, than the doctor was to execute his for nothing. Without making any farther enquiry, therefore, into the condition of the man, he immediately went up ſtairs.

As ſoon as the bailiff returned down ſtairs, which was immediately after he had lodged the doctor in the room, Booth had the curioſity to aſk him who this man was. 'Why, I do not know much of him,' ſaid the bailiff. 'I had him once in cuſtody before now; I remember 'it was when your honour was here laſt; and now I 'remember too, he ſaid, then, he knew your honour very 'well. Indeed, I had ſome opinion of him at that time; 'for he ſpent his money very much like a gentleman; 'but I have diſcovered ſince, that he is a poor fellow, 'and worth nothing. He is a mere ſhy cock. I have 'had the ſtuff about me this week, and could never get 'at him till this morning: nay, I do not believe we 'ſhould have ever found out his lodgings, had it not 'been for the attorney that was here juſt now, who

'gave

'gave us information. And ſo we took him this 'morning by a comical way enough. For we dreſſed 'up one of my men in women's clothes, who told 'the people of the houſe, that he was his ſiſter juſt 'come to town; for we were told by the attorney that 'he had ſuch a ſiſter; upon which he was let up ſtairs, 'and ſo kept the door ajar till I and another ruſhed in. 'Let me tell you, captain, there are as good ſtrata-'gems made uſe of in our buſineſs as any in the 'army.'

'But pray, Sir,' ſaid Booth, 'did you not tell me 'this morning that the poor fellow was deſperately 'wounded; nay, I think you told the doctor that he 'was a dying man.'

'I had like to have forgot that,' cries the bailiff. 'Nothing would ſerve the gentleman, but that he muſt 'make reſiſtance, and he gave my man a blow with a 'ſtick, but I ſoon quieted him, by giving him a wipe 'or two with a hanger. Not that I believe I have 'done his buſineſs neither; but the fellow is faint-'hearted, and the ſurgeon, I fancy, frightens him more 'than he need. But, however, let the worſt come to 'the worſt, the law is all on my ſide, and it is only '*ſe fendendo*. The attorney that was here juſt now 'told me ſo, and bid me fear nothing: for that he 'would ſtand my friend, and undertake the cauſe; 'he is a deviliſh good one at a defence at the Old 'Bailey, I promiſe you. I have known him bring off 'ſeveral that every one thought would have been 'hanged.'

'But ſuppoſe you ſhould be acquitted,' ſaid Booth, 'would not the blood of this poor wretch lie a little 'heavy at your heart?'

'Why ſhould it, captain?' ſaid the bailiff. 'Is 'it not all done in a lawful way? why will people 'reſiſt the law, when they know the conſequence? 'To be ſure, if a man was to kill another in an unlawful 'manner as it were, and what the law calls murder,

'that

'that is quite and clear another thing. I should not 'care to be convicted of murder any more than another 'man. Why, now, captain, you have been abroad in 'the wars, they tell me, and to be sure must have 'killed men in your time. Pray, was you ever afraid 'afterwards of seeing their ghosts?'

'That is a different affair,' cries Booth; but I 'would not kill a man in cold blood for all the world.'

'There is no difference at all, as I can see,' cries the bailiff. 'One is as much in the way of business 'as the other. When gentlemen behave themselves 'like unto gentlemen, I know how to treat them as 'such as well as any officer the king hath. And when 'they do not, why, they must take what follows, and 'the law doth not call it murder.'

Booth very clearly saw the bailiff had squared his conscience exactly according to law, and that he could not easily subvert his way of thinking. He therefore gave up the cause, and desired the bailiff to expedite the bonds, which he promised to do, saying he hoped he had used him with proper civility this time, if he had not the last, and that he should be remembered for it.

But before we close this chapter, we shall endeavour to satisfy an enquiry which may arise in our most favourite readers (for so are the most curious) how it came to pass that such a parson as was Doctor Harrison should employ such a fellow as this Murphy.

The case then was thus. This Murphy had been clerk to an attorney in the very same town in which the doctor lived, and when he was out of his time, had set up with a character fair enough, and married a maid servant of Mrs. Harris, by which means he had all the business to which that lady and her friends, in which number was the doctor, could recommend him.

Murphy went on with his business, and thrived very well, till he happened to make an unfortunate slip, in which he was detected by a brother of the same calling. But though we call this by the gentle name of a slip, in

respect

reſpect to it's being ſo extremely common, it was a matter on which the law, if it had ever come to its ears, would have paſſed a very ſevere cenſure; being, indeed, no leſs than perjury and ſubornation of perjury.

This brother attorney, being a very good-natured man, and unwilling to beſpatter his own profeſſion, and conſidering, perhaps, that the conſequence did in no wiſe affect the public, who had no manner of intereſt in the alternative, whether A. in whom the right was, or B. to whom Mr. Murphy, by the means aforeſaid, had transferred it, ſucceded in an action.--- We mention this particular, becauſe, as this brother attorney was a very violent party man, and a profeſſed ſtickler for the public, to ſuffer any injury to have been done to that, would have been highly inconſiſtent with his principles.

This gentleman, therefore, came to Mr. Murphy, and after ſhewing him that he had it in his power to convict him of the aforeſaid crime, very generouſly told him, that he had not the leaſt delight in bringing any man to deſtruction, nor the leaſt animoſity againſt him. All that he inſiſted upon was, that he would not live in the ſame town or country with one who had been guilty of ſuch an action. He then told Mr. Murphy that he would keep the ſecret on two conditions; the one was, that he immediately quitted that country; the other was, that he ſhould convince him he deſerved his kindneſs by his gratitude, and that Murphy ſhould transfer to the other all the buſineſs which he then had in thoſe parts, and to which he could poſſibly recommend him.

It is the obſervation of a very wiſe man, that it is a very common exerciſe of wiſdom in this world, of two evils to chuſe the leaſt. The reader therefore cannot doubt by that Mr. Murphy complied with the alternative propoſed by this kind brother, and accepted the terms on which ſecreſy was to be obtained.

This happened while the doctor was abroad; and with

with all this, except the departure of Mr. Murphy, not only the doctor, but the whole town, (ſave his aforeſaid brother alone) were to this day unacquainted.

The doctor, at his return, hearing that Mr. Murphy was gone, applied to the other attorney in his affairs, who ſtill employed this Murphy as his agent in town, partly perhaps out of good will to him, and partly upon the recommendation of Miſs Harris; for as he had married a ſervant of the family, and a particular favourite of her's, there can be no wonder that ſhe, who was entirely ignorant of the affair above related, as well as of his conduct in town, ſhould continue her favour to him. It will appear, therefore, I apprehend, no longer ſtrange, that the doctor, who had ſeen this man but three times ſince his removal to town, and then converſed with him only on buſineſs, ſhould remain as ignorant of his life and character, as a man generally is of the character of the hackney coachman who drives him. Nor doth it reflect more on the honour or underſtanding of the doctor under theſe circumſtances to employ Murphy, than it would if he had been driven about the town by a thief or a murderer.

## CHAP. VI.

*What paſſed between the Doctor and the Sick Man.*

WE left the doctor in the laſt chapter with the wounded man, to whom the doctor, in a very gentle voice, ſpoke as follows:

'I am ſorry, friend, to ſee you in this ſituation, and 'am very ready to give you any comfort or aſſiſtance 'within my power.'

'I thank you kindly, doctor,' ſaid the man. 'Indeed, I ſhould not have preſumed to have ſent to you, 'had I not known your character; for though I 'believe I am not at all known to you, I have lived 'many years in that town where you yourſelf had a 'houſe. My name is Robinſon. I uſed to write for 'the attornies in thoſe parts, and I have been employed 'on your buſineſs in my time.'

'I do

'I do not recollect you, nor your name,' ſaid the doctor: 'but conſider, friend, your moments are precious, and your buſineſs, as I am informed, is to offer up your prayers to that Great Being, before whom you are ſhortly to appear. But firſt, let me exhort you earneſtly to a moſt ſerious repentance of all your ſins.'

'Oh! doctor,' ſaid the man, 'Pray what is your opinion of a death-bed repentance?'

'If repentance is ſincere,' cries the doctor, 'I hope, through the mercies and merits of our moſt powerful and benign Interceſſor, it will never come too late.'

'But do not you think, Sir,' cries the man, 'that in order to obtain forgiveneſs of any great ſin we have committed by an injury done to our neighbours, it is neceſſary, as far as in us lies, to make all the amends we can to the party injured, and to undo, if poſſible, the injury we have done.'

'Moſt undoubtedly,' cries the doctor; 'our pretence to repentance would otherwiſe be groſs hypocriſy, and an impudent attempt to deceive and impoſe upon our Creator himſelf.'

'Indeed, I am of the ſame opinion,' cries the penitent; and I think farther, that this is thrown in my way, and hinted to me by that Great Being; for an accident happened to me yeſterday, by which, as things have fallen out ſince, I think I plainly diſcern the hand of Providence. I went yeſterday, Sir, you muſt know, to a pawnbroker's, to pawn the laſt moveable which, except the poor clothes you ſee on my back, I am worth in the world. While I was there, a young lady came in, to pawn her picture. She had diſguiſed herſelf ſo much, and pulled her hood ſo over her face, that I did not know her while ſhe ſtaid, which was ſcarce three minutes. As ſoon as ſhe was gone, the pawnbroker taking the picture in his hand, cried out, "Upon my word, this is

'' the handſomeſt face I ever ſaw in my life." I deſired
' him to let me look on the picture, which he readily
' did, and I no ſooner caſt my eyes upon it, than the
' ſtrong reſemblance ſtruck me, and I knew it to be
' Mrs. Booth.'

' Mrs. Booth! what Mrs. Booth?' cries the doctor.

' Captain Booth's lady; the captain who is now
' below,' ſaid the other.

' How! cries the doctor, with great impetuoſity.

' Have patience,' ſaid the man, ' and you ſhall hear
' all. I expreſſed ſome ſurprize to the pawnbroker,
' and aſked the lady's name. He anſwered, that he
' knew not her name, but that ſhe was ſome undone
' wretch, who had the day before left all her clothes
' with him in pawn. My guilt immediately flew in
' my face, and told me, I had been acceſſary to this
' lady's undoing. The ſudden ſhock ſo affected me,
' that, had it not been for a dram, which the pawn-
' broker gave me, I believe, I ſhould have died on
' the ſpot.'

' Acceſſary to her undoing! how acceſſary?' ſaid
the doctor. ' Pray tell me; for I am impatient to
' hear.'

' I will tell you all, as faſt as I can,' cries the ſick
man. ' You know, good doctor, that Mrs. Harris of
' our town had two daughters, this Mrs. Booth, and
' another. Now, Sir, it ſeems the other daughter had
' ſome way or other diſobliged her mother, a little
' before the old lady died, therefore ſhe made a will,
' and left all her fortune, except one thouſand pounds,
' to Mrs Booth; to which will Mr. Murphy, myſelf,
' and another who is now dead, were the witneſſes. Mrs.
' Harris afterwards died ſuddenly; upon which it was
' contrived, by her other daughter and Mr. Murphy,
' to make a new will, in which Mrs. Booth had a
' legacy of ten pounds, and all the reſt was given to the
' other. To this will, Murphy, myſelf, and the ſame
' third perſon, again ſet our hands.'

' Good

'Good Heaven! how wonderful is thy providence!' cries the doctor. 'Murphy, say you?'

'He himself, Sir,' answed Robinson: 'Murphy, who 'is the greatest rogue, I believe, now in the world.'

'Pray, Sir, proceed,' cries the doctor.

'For this service, Sir,' said Robinson, 'myself and 'the third person, one Carter, received two hundred 'pounds each. What reward Murphy himself had, I 'know not. Carter died soon afterwards; and from 'that time, at several payments, I have by threats 'extorted above a hundred pounds more. And this, 'Sir, is the whole truth, which I am ready to testify, 'if it would please Heaven to prolong my life.'

'I hope it will,' cries the doctor; 'but something 'must be done for fear of accident---I will send to 'council immediately, to know how to secure your 'testimony. Whom can I get to send?---Stay, aye--- 'he will do---but I know not where his house or his 'chambers are---I will go myself---But I may be 'wanted here.'

While the doctor was in this violent agitation, the surgeon made his appearance. The doctor stood still in a meditating posture, while the surgeon examined his patient. After which the doctor begged him to declare his opinion, and whether he thought the wounded man in any immediate danger of death. 'I do not know,' answered the surgeon, 'what you call immediate. He may 'live several days; nay, he may recover. It is impossible 'to give any certain opinion in these cases. He then launched forth into a set of terms, which, the doctor, with all his scholarship, could not understand. To say the truth, many of them were not to be found in any dictionary or lexicon.

One discovery however the doctor made, and that was, that the surgeon was a very ignorant, conceited fellow, and knew nothing of his profession. He resolved therefore to get better advice for the sick; but this he postponed at present, and applying himself to

the ſurgeon, ſaid he ſhould be very much obliged to him, if he knew where to find ſuch a counſellor, and would fetch him thither. 'I would not aſk ſuch a 'favour of you, Sir,' ſays the doctor, 'if it was not 'buſineſs of the laſt importance, or if I could find any 'other meſſenger.'

'I fetch, Sir!' ſaid the ſurgeon very angrily. 'Do 'you take me for a footman or a porter? I do not 'know who you are; but I believe you are full as 'proper to go on ſuch an errand as I am:' (for as the doctor, who was juſt come off his journey, was very roughly dreſſed, the ſurgeon held him in no great reſpect.) The ſurgeon then called aloud from the top of the ſtairs, 'Let my coachman draw up?' and ſtrutted off without any ceremony, telling his patient he would call again the next day.

At this very inſtant arrived Murphy with the other bail, and finding Booth alone, he aſked the bailiff at the door, what was become of the doctor: 'Why, the doctor,' anſwered he, 'is above ſtairs, praying with '-----,' 'How!' cries Murphy. 'How came you not 'to carry him directly to Newgate, as you promiſed 'me?---'Why, becauſe he was wounded,' cries the bailiff. 'I thought it was a charity to take care 'of him; and beſides why ſhould one make more 'noiſe about the matter than is neceſſary?---'And 'Dr. Harriſon with him?' ſaid Murphy. 'Yes, he is,' ſaid the bailiff: 'he deſired to ſpeak with the doctor 'very much, and they have been praying together 'almoſt this hour.'---'All is up, and undone,' cries Murphy. 'Let me come by, I have thought on ſome-'thing which I muſt do immediately.'

Now as by means of the ſurgeon's leaving the door open, the doctor heard Murphy's voice naming Robinſon peeviſhly, he drew ſoftly to the top of the ſtairs, where he heard the foregoing dialogue; and as ſoon as Murphy had uttered his laſt words, and was moving downwards, the doctor immediately ſallied from his poſt,

poſt, running as faſt as he could, and crying, 'Stop 'the villain! ſtop the thief!'

The attorney wanted no better hint to accelerate his pace; and having the ſtart of the doctor, got down ſtairs, and out into the ſtreet; but the doctor was ſo cloſe to his heels, and being in foot the nimbler of the two, he ſoon overtook him, and laid hold of him, as he would have done on either Broughton or Slack in the ſame cauſe.

This action in the ſtreet, accompanied with the frequent cry of 'Stop thief!' by the doctor, during the chace, preſently drew together a large mob, who began as is uſual, to enter immediately upon buſineſs, and to make ſtrict enquiry into the matter, in order to proceed to juſtice in their ſummary way.

Murphy, who knew well the temper of the mob, cried out, 'If you are a bailiff, ſhew me your writ.--- 'Gentlemen, he pretends to arreſt me here without a 'writ.'

Upon this, one of the ſturdieſt and forwardeſt of the mob, and who, by a ſuperior ſtrength of body and of lungs, preſided in this aſſembly, declared he would ſuffer no ſuch thing. 'D---n me,' ſays he, 'away to 'the pump with the catchpole directly; ſhew me your 'writ, or let the gentleman go; you ſhall not arreſt a 'man contrary to law.'

He then laid his hands on the doctor, who ſtill faſt griping the attorney, cried out, 'He is a villain! I am 'no bailiff, but a clergyman; and this lawyer is guilty 'of forgery, and hath ruined a poor family.'

'How! cries the ſpokeſman; 'a lawyer: that alters 'the caſe---'

'Yes, faith,' cries another of the mob, 'it is Law-'yer Murphy. I know him very well.'

'And hath he ruined a poor family? Like enough, 'faith, if he is a lawyer. Away with him to the juſ-'tice immediately.'

The bailiff now came up, deſiring to know what

was the matter; to whom Doctor Harriſon anſwered, that he had arreſted that villain for forgery. 'How 'can you arreſt him,' cries the bailiff, 'you are no 'officer, nor have any warrant? Mr. Murphy is a 'gentleman, and he ſhall be uſed as ſuch.'

'Nay, to be ſure,' cries the ſpokeſman, 'there ought 'to be a warrant; that's the truth on't.'

'There needs no warrant,' cries the doctor, 'I 'accuſe him of felony; and I know ſo much of the 'law of England, that any man may arreſt a felon with-'out any warrant whatever. This villain hath undone 'a poor family; and I will die on the ſpot before I part 'with him.'

'If the law be ſo,' cries the orator, 'that is another 'matter. And to be ſure, to ruin a poor man is the 'greateſt of ſins. And being a lawyer too, makes it 'much the worſe. He ſhall go before a juſtice; d---n 'me, if he ſhan't go before the juſtice. I ſays the 'word he ſhall.'

'I ſay he is a gentleman, and ſhall be uſed according 'to law,' cries the bailiff. 'And though you are a 'clergyman,' ſaid he to Doctor Harriſon, 'you do not 'ſhew yourſelf as one by your actions.'

'That's a bailiff,' cries one of the mob; 'one law-'yer will always ſtand by another; but I think the 'clergyman is a very good man, and acts becoming a 'clergyman to ſtand by the poor.

At which words the mob all gave a great ſhout; and ſeveral cried out, 'Bring him along; away with 'him to the juſtice.'

And now a conſtable appeared, and with an authoritative voice, declared what he was, produced his ſtaff, and demanded the peace.

The doctor then delivered his priſoner over to the officer, and charged him with felony; the conſtable received him; the attorney ſubmitted; the bailiff was huſhed; and the waves of the mob inſtantly ſubſided.

The doctor now balanced with himſelf how he ſhould pro-

proceed; at laſt he determined to leave Booth a little longer in captivity, and not quit ſight of Murphy, before he had lodged him ſafe with a magiſtrate. They then all moved forwards to the juſtice: the conſtable and his priſoner marching firſt, the doctor and the bailiff following next, and about five thouſand mob, (for no leſs number were aſſembled in a very few minutes) following the proceſſion.

They found the magiſtrate juſt ſitting down to his dinner: however, when he was acquainted with the doctor's profeſſion, he immediately admitted him, and heard his buſineſs. Which he no ſooner perfectly underſtood, with all it's circumſtances, than he reſolved, though it was then very late, and he had been fatigued all the morning with public buſineſs, to poſtpone all refreſhment till he had diſcharged his duty. He accordingly adjourned the priſoner and his cauſe to the bailiff's houſe, whither himſelf with the doctor immediately repaired, and whither the attorney was followed by a much larger number of attendants than he had been honoured with before.

## CHAP. VII.

*In which the Hiſtory draws towards to a Concluſion.*

NOTHING could exceed the aſtoniſhment of Booth at the behaviour of the doctor at the time when he ſallied forth in purſuit of the attorney; for which it was ſo impoſſible for him to account in any manner whatever. He remained a long time in the utmoſt torture of mind, till at laſt the bailiff's wife came to him, and aſked him if the doctor was not a madman; and in truth he could hardly defend him from that imputation.

While he was in this perplexity, the maid of the houſe brought him a meſſage from Robinſon, deſiring the favour of ſeeing him above ſtairs. With this he immediately complied.

When theſe two were alone together; and the key turned on them, (for the bailiff's wife was a moſt careful

ful perſon, and never omitted that ceremony in the abſence of her huſband, having always at her tongue's end that excellent proverb of 'Safe bind, ſafe find;') Robinſon, looking ſtedfaſtly upon Booth, ſaid, 'I 'believe, Sir, you ſcarce remember me.'

Booth anſwered, that he thought he had ſeen his face ſomewhere before; but could not then recollect when or where.

'Indeed, Sir, anſwered the man, it was a place 'which no man can remember with pleaſure. But do 'you not remember, a few weeks ago, that you had 'the misfortune to be in a certain priſon in this town, 'where you loſt a trifling ſum at cards to a fellow pri-'ſoner?'

This hint ſufficiently awakened Booth's memory, and he now recollected the features of his old friend Robinſon. He anſwered him a little ſurlily 'I know 'you now very well: but I did not imagine you 'would ever have reminded me of that tranſaction.

'Alas, Sir!' anſwered Robinſon, 'whatever hap-'pened then was very trifling compared to the injuries 'I have done you; but if my life be ſpared long 'enough, I will now undo it all; and as I have been 'one of your worſt enemies, I will be now one of your 'beſt friends.'

He was juſt entering upon his ſtory, when a noiſe was heard below, which might be almoſt compared to what hath been heard in Holland, when the dykes have given way, and the ocean in an inundation breaks in upon the land. It ſeemed indeed as if the whole world was burſting into the houſe at once.

Booth was a man of great firmneſs of mind, and he had need of it all at this inſtant. As for poor Robinſon, the uſual concomitants of guilt attended him, and he began to tremble in a violent manner.

The firſt perſon who aſcended the ſtairs was the doctor; who no ſooner ſaw Booth, than he ran to him, and embraced him, crying, 'My child, I wiſh you joy with

'all

'all my heart. Your ſufferings are all at an end; and 'Providence hath done you the juſtice at laſt, which it 'will one day or other render to all men. You will 'hear all preſently; but I can now only tell you, that 'your ſiſter is diſcovered, and the eſtate is your own.'

Booth was in ſuch confuſion, that he ſcarce made any anſwer; and now appeared the juſtice and his clerk, and immediately afterwards the conſtable with his priſoner, the bailiff, and as many more as could poſſibly croud up ſtairs.

The doctor now addreſſed himſelf to the ſick man, and deſired him to repeat the ſame information before the juſtice which he had made already; to which Robinſon readily conſented.

While the clerk was taking down the information, the attorney expreſſed a very impatient deſire to ſend inſtantly for his clerk; and expreſſed ſo much uneaſineſs at the confuſion in which he had left his papers at home, that a thought ſuggeſted itſelf to the doctor, that, if his houſe was ſearched, ſome lights and evidence relating to this affair would certainly be found; he therefore deſired the juſtice to grant a ſearch-warrant immediately to ſearch his houſe.

The juſtice anſwered that he had no ſuch power. That if there was any ſuſpicion of ſtolen goods, he could grant a warrant to ſearch for them.

'How, Sir!' ſaid the doctor, 'can you grant a war-'rant to ſearch a man's houſe for a ſilver tea-ſpoon, and 'not in a caſe like this, where a man is robbed of his 'whole eſtate?'

'Hold, Sir!' ſays the ſick man, 'I believe I can 'anſwer that point; for I can ſwear he hath ſeve-'ral title deeds of the eſtate now in his poſſeſſion, which 'I am ſure were ſtolen from the right owner.'

The juſtice ſtill heſitated. He ſaid title deeds ſavoured of the reality, and it was not felony to ſteal them. If, indeed, they were taken away in a box, then it would be felony to ſteal the box.

'Savour

'Savour of the reality! savour of the fartality!' said the doctor. 'I never heard such incomprehensible 'nonsense. This is impudent as well as childish, 'trifling with the lives and properties of men!'

'Well, Sir,' said Robinson, 'I now am sure I can 'do his business; for I know he hath a silver cup in 'his possession, which is the property of this gentle-'man (meaning Booth), and how he got it but by 'stealth, let him account if he can.'

'That will do,' cries the justice with great pleasure. 'That will do; and if you will charge him on your 'oath with that, I will instantly grant my warrant to 'search his house for it.---'And I will go and see it 'executed,' cries the doctor. For it was a maxim of his, that no man could descend below himself in doing any act which may contribute to protect an innocent person, or to bring a rogue to the gallows.

The oath was instantly taken, the warrant signed, and the doctor attended the constable in the execution of it.

The clerk then proceeded in taking the information of Robinson, and had just finished it, when the doctor returned with the utmost joy in his countenance, and declared that he had sufficient evidence of the fact in his possession. He had indeed two or three letters from Miss Harris, in answer to the attorney's frequent demands of money for secresy, that fully explained the whole villainy.

The justice now asked the prisoner what he had to say for himself, or whether he chose to say any thing in his own defence.

'Sir,' said the attorney with great confidence, 'I am 'not to defend myself here. It will be of no service 'to me; for I know you neither can nor will discharge 'me. But I am extremely innocent of all this matter, 'as I doubt not but to make appear to the satisfaction 'of a court of justice.'

The legal previous ceremonies were then gone through

of

of binding over the profecutor, &c. and then the attorney was committed to Newgate: whither he was eſcorted amidſt the acclamations of the populace.

When Murphy was departed, and a little calm reſtored in the houſe, the juſtice made his compliments of congratulation to Booth; who, as well as he could in his preſent tumult of joy, returned his thanks to both the magiſtrate and the doctor. They were now all preparing to depart, when Mr. Bondum ſtept up to Booth, and ſaid, 'Hold, Sir, you have forgot one thing; 'you have not given bail yet.'

This occaſioned ſome diſtreſs at this time; for the attorney's friend was departed; but when the juſtice heard this, he immediately offered himſelf as the other bondſman. And thus ended the affair.

It was now paſt ſix o'clock, and none of the gentlemen had yet dined. They very readily therefore accepted the magiſtrate's invitation, and went all together to his houſe.

And now the very firſt thing that was done, even before they ſat down to dinner, was to diſpatch a meſſenger to one of the beſt ſurgeons in town, to take care of Robinſon; and another meſſenger to Booth's lodgings, to prevent Amelia's concern at their ſtaying ſo long.

The latter, however was to little purpoſe; for Amelia's patience had been worn out before, and ſhe had taken a hackney coach, and driven to the bailiff's where ſhe arrived a little after the departure of her huſband, and was thence directed to the juſtice's.

Though there was no kind of reaſon for Amelia's fright at hearing that her huſband and Doctor Harriſon were gone before the juſtice; and though ſhe indeed imagined that they were there in the light of complainants, not of offenders; yet ſo tender were her fears for her huſband, and ſo much had her gentle ſpirits been lately agitated, that ſhe had a thouſand apprehenſions of ſhe knew not what. When ſhe arrived therefore at the

the houſe, ſhe ran directly into the room, where all the company were at dinner, ſcarce knowing what ſhe did, or whither ſhe was going.

She found her huſband in ſuch a ſituation, and diſcovered ſuch chearfulneſs in his countenance, that ſo violent a turn was given to her ſpirits, that ſhe was juſt able, with the aſſiſtance of a glaſs of water, to ſupport herſelf. She ſoon, however, recovered her calmneſs, and in a little time began to eat what might indeed be almoſt called her breakfaſt.

The juſtice now wiſhed her joy of what had happened that day; for which ſhe kindly thanked him, apprehending he meant the liberty of her huſband. His worſhip might perhaps have explained himſelf more largely, had not the doctor given him a timely wink; for this wiſe and good man was fearful of making ſuch a diſcovery all at once to Amelia, leſt it ſhould over-power her; and luckily the juſtice's wife was not well enough acquainted with the matter to ſay any thing more on it than barely to aſſure the lady that ſhe joined in her huſband's congratulation.

Amelia was then in a clean white gown which ſhe had that day redeemed, and was, indeed, dreſſed all over with great neatneſs and exactneſs; with the glow therefore which aroſe in her features from finding her huſband releaſed from his captivity, ſhe made ſo charming a figure, that ſhe attracted the eyes of the magiſtrate and of his wife; and they both agreed, when they were alone, that they had never ſeen ſo charming a creature; nay, Booth himſelf afterwards told her, that he ſcarce ever remembered her to look ſo extremely beautiful as ſhe did that evening.

Whether Amelia's beauty, or the reflection on the remarkable act of juſtice he had performed, or whatever motive filled the magiſtrate with extraordinary good-humour, and opened his heart and cellars, I will not determine; but he gave them ſo hearty a welcome, and they were all ſo pleaſed with each other, that Amelia,

for

for that one night, truſted the care of her children to the woman where they lodged, nor did the company riſe from table till the clock ſtruck eleven.

They then ſeparated. Amelia and Booth, having been ſet down at their lodgings, retired into each other's arms; nor did Booth that evening, by the doctor's advice, mention one word of the grand affair to his wife.

## CHAP. VIII.

*Thus this Hiſtory draws nearer to a Concluſion.*

IN the morning early Amelia received the following letter from Mrs. Atkinſon.

'THE ſurgeon of the regiment to which the captain 'my huſband lately belonged, and who came this 'evening to ſee the captain, hath almoſt frightened me out 'of my wits, by a ſtrange ſtory of your huſband being 'committed to priſon by a juſtice of peace for forgery. 'For Heaven's ſake, ſend me the truth. If my huſ- 'band can be of any ſervice, weak as he is, he will be 'carried in a chair to ſerve a brother officer, for whom 'he hath a regard, which I need not mention. Or if 'the ſum of twenty pounds will be of any ſervice to 'you, I will wait upon you with it the moment I can 'get my cloaths on, the morning you receive this; for 'it is too late to ſend to night. The captain begs his 'hearty ſervice and reſpects; and believe me, dear 'Madam, your ever affectionate friend, and humble 'ſervant,

'F. ATKINSON.'

When Amelia read this letter to Booth, they were both equally ſurprized, ſhe at the commitment for forgery, and he at ſeeing ſuch a letter from Mrs. Atkinſon; for he was a ſtranger yet to the reconciliation that had happened.

Booth's doubts were firſt ſatisfied by Amelia, from which he received great affection and fondneſs for Mr. Atkinſon, who, indeed, ſo well deſerved it. 'Well, 'my dear,' ſaid he to Amelia, ſmiling, 'ſhall we ac- 'cept this generous offer.'

'O fye! no certainly;' answered she.

'Why not;' cries Booth: 'it is but a trifle: and 'yet it will be of great service to us?'

'But consider, my dear,' said she, 'how ill these 'poor people can spare it.'

'They can spare it for a little while,' said Booth; 'and we shall soon pay it them again.'

'When, my dear?' said Amelia. 'Do, my dear 'Will, consider our wretched circumstances. I beg 'you let us go into the country immediately, and live 'upon bread and water, till fortune pleases to smile 'upon us.'

'I am convinced that day is not far off,' said Booth. 'However, give me leave to send an answer to Mrs. 'Atkinson, that we shall be glad of her company im-'mediately to breakfast.'

'You know I never contradict you,' said she; 'but 'I assure you it is contrary to my inclinations to take 'this money.'

'Well, suffer me,' cries he, 'to act this once con-'trary to your inclinations.' He then writ a short note to Mrs. Atkinson, and dispatched it away immediately: which when he had done, Amelia said---'I 'shall be glad of Mrs. Atkinson's company to break-'fast; but yet I wish you would oblige me in refusing 'this money. Take five guineas only. That is, in-'deed, such a sum as, if we never should pay it, would 'sit light on my mind. The last persons in the world 'from whom I would receive favours of that sort, are 'the poor and generous.'

'You can receive favours only from the generous,' cries Booth: 'and to be plain with you, there are very 'few who are generous, that are not poor.'

'What think you,' said she, 'of Dr. Harrison?'

'I do assure you,' said Booth, 'he is far from be-'ing rich. The doctor hath an income of little more 'than six hundred pounds a year; and I am convinced 'he gives away four of it. Indeed, he is one of the best

'beſt œconomiſts in the world: but yet I am poſitive 'he never was at any time poſſeſſed of five hundred 'pounds ſince he hath been a man. Conſider, dear 'Emily, the late obligations we have to this gentle-'man; it would be unreaſonable to expect more, at 'leaſt at preſent? my half-pay is mortgaged for a year 'to come. How then ſhall we live?'

'By our labour,' anſwered ſhe. 'I am able to la-'bour, and I am ſure I am not aſhamed of it.'

'And do you really think you can ſupport ſuch a 'life?

'I am ſure I could be happy in it,' anſwered Ame-lia. 'And why not I, as well as a thouſand others, 'who have not the happineſs of ſuch a huſband to 'make life delicious? why ſhould I complain of my 'hard fate, while many, who are much poorer than I, 'enjoy theirs? Am I of a ſuperior rank of being to the 'wife of the honeſt labourer? am I not partaker of 'one common nature with her?'

'My angel,' cries Booth, 'it delights me to hear 'you talk thus, and for a reaſon you little gueſs; for 'I am aſſured that one who can ſo heroically endure 'adverſity, will bear proſperity with equal greatneſs 'of ſoul; for the mind that cannot be dejected by the 'former, is not likely to be tranſported with the lat-'ter.'

'If it had pleaſed Heaven,' cried ſhe, 'to have tried 'me, I think, at leaſt hope, I ſhould have preſerved 'my humility.'

'Then, my dear,' ſaid he, 'I will relate you a 'dream I had laſt night. You know, you lately men-'tioned a dream of yours.'

'Do ſo,' ſaid ſhe, 'I am attentive.'

'I dreamed,' ſaid he, 'this night, that we were in 'the moſt miſerable ſituation imaginable. Indeed, in 'the ſituation we were yeſterday morning, or rather 'worſe; that I was laid in a priſon for debt, and that 'you wanted a morſel of bread to feed the mouths of

'your hungry children. At length (for nothing, you 'know is quicker than the tranſition in dreams) Dr. 'Harriſon, methought, came to me with chearfulneſs 'and joy in his countenance. The priſon-doors imme-'diately flew open; and Dr. Harriſon introduced you, 'gayly, though not richly, dreſſed. That you gently 'chid me for ſtaying ſo long; all on a ſudden appeared 'a coach with four horſes to it, in which was a maid-'ſervant with our two children. We both immediately 'went into the coach, and taking our leave of the doc-'tor, ſet out towards your country-houſe; for yours I 'dreamed it was. I only aſk you now, if this was 'real, and the tranſition almoſt as ſudden, could you 'ſupport it?'

Amelia was going to anſwer, when Mrs. Atkinſon came into the room: and, after a very little previous ceremony, preſented Booth with a bank-note, which he received of her, ſaying, he would very ſoon repay it; a promiſe that a litle offended Amelia, as ſhe thought he had no chance of keeping it.

The doctor preſently arrived, and the company ſat down to breakfaſt, during which Mrs. Atkinſon entertained them with the hiſtory of the doctors that had attended her huſband, by whoſe advice Atkinſon was recovered from every thing but the weakneſs which his diſtemper had occaſioned.

When the tea-table was removed, Booth told the doctor that he had acquainted his wife with a dream he had laſt night. 'I dreamed, doctor,' ſaid he, 'that ſhe 'was reſtored to her eſtate.'

'Very well,' ſaid the doctor, 'and if I am to be 'the Oniropolis, I believe the dream will come to paſs. 'To ſay the truth, I have rather a better opinion of 'dreams than Horace had. Old Homer ſays, they 'came from Jupiter; and as to your dream, I have of-'ten had it in my waking thoughts, that ſome time or 'other that roguery (for ſo I was always convinced it 'was) would be brought to light:---for the ſame

'Homer

'Homer ſays, as you, Madam,' (meaning Mrs. Atkinſon) 'very well know---

Εἰπεργάρτε καίαὐτίκ' Ὀλύμπιος ȣ' κἐτέλεσσεν,
Ἐκ τε καὶ ὀψε τελεῖ· σύν τε μεγάλω ἀπετισαν
Συνσ φῆσινκεφαλῆσι, γυναιξί τε καὶ τεκέεσσιν.'*

'I have no Greek ears, Sir,' ſaid Mrs. Atkinſon. 'I believe I could underſtand it in the Delphin Homer.'

'I wiſh,' cries he, 'my dear child,' (to Amelia) 'you would read a little in the Delphin Ariſtotle, or 'elſe in ſome chriſtian divine, to learn a doctrine 'which you will one day have a uſe for. I mean, to 'bear the hardeſt of all human conflicts, and ſupport 'with an even temper, and without any violent tranſ'ports of mind, a ſudden guſt of proſperity.'

'Indeed,' cries Amelia, 'I ſhould almoſt think my 'huſband and you, doctor, had ſome very good news 'to tell me, by your uſing, both of you, the ſame in'troduction. As far as I know myſelf, I think I can 'anſwer, I can ſupport any degree of proſperity; and 'I think I yeſterday ſhewed I could; for I do aſſure 'you, it is not in the power of fortune to try me with 'ſuch another tranſition from grief to joy, as I con'ceived from ſeeing my huſband in priſon and at li'berty.'

'Well, you are a good girl,' cries the doctor, 'and 'after I have put on my ſpectacles, I will try you.'

The doctor then took out a newſpaper, and read as follows---

"Yeſterday one Murphy, an eminent attorney at "law, was committed to Newgate, for the forgery of a "will, under which an eſtate had been for many years "detained from the right owner."

* If Jupiter doth not immediately execute his vengeance, he will however execute it at laſt; and their tranſgreſſions ſhall fall fall heavily on their own heads, and on their wives and children.

'Now in this paragraph there is ſomething very remarkable, and that is---that it is true: but *opus eſt explanatum*. In the Delphin edition of this newſpaper, there is the following note upon the words *right owner*---"The right owner of this eſtate is a young lady of the higheſt merit, whoſe maiden name was Harris, and who ſome time ſince was married to an idle fellow, one Lieutenant Booth. And the beſt hiſtorians aſſure us, that letters from the elder ſiſter of this lady, which manifeſtly prove the forgery, and clear up the whole affair, are in the hands of an old parſon, called Dr. Harriſon."

'And is this really true!' cries Amelia.

'Yes, really and ſincerely,' cries the doctor; 'the whole eſtate: for your mother left it you all, and it is as ſurely yours, as if you was already in poſſeſſion.'

'Gracious Heaven,' cries ſhe, falling on her knees, 'I thank you!' And then ſtarting up, ſhe ran to her huſband, and embracing him, cried---'My dear love, 'I wiſh you joy! and I ought in gratitude to wiſh it 'you; for you are the cauſe of mine. It is upon 'yours, and my children's account, that I principally 'rejoice.'

Mrs. Atkinſon roſe from her chair, and jumped about the room for joy, repeating---

*Turne, quod optanti divum promittere nemo*
*Auderat, volvenda dies, en, attulit ultro.* †

Amelia now threw herſelf into a chair, complained ſhe was a little faint, and begged a glaſs of water. The doctor adviſed her to be blooded; but ſhe refuſed, ſaying, ſhe required a vent of another kind. She then deſired her children to be brought to her, whom ſhe immediately caught in her arms, and having profuſely

† What none of all the gods could grant thy vows,
That, Turnus, this auſpicious day beſtows.

cried

COOKE's POCKET EDITION OF SELECT NOVELS.

R. Corbould del. Engravd for C. Cooke, Pat. Row. Nov. 16. 1793. C. Warren, sc.

2 JY 58

cried over them for ſeveral minutes, declared ſhe was eaſy. After which, ſhe ſoon regained her uſual temper and complexion.

That day they dined together, and in the afternoon they all, except the doctor, viſited Captain Atkinſon; he repaired to the bailiff's houſe to viſit the ſick man, whom he found very chearful, the ſurgeon having aſſured him, that he was in no manner of danger.

The doctor had a long ſpiritual diſcourſe with Robinſon, who aſſured him that he ſincerely repented of his paſt life; that he was reſolved to lead his future days in a different manner, and to make what amends he could for his ſins to ſociety, by bringing one of the greateſt rogues in it to juſtice. There was a circumſtance which much pleaſed the doctor, and made him conclude that, however Robinſon had been corrupted by his old maſter, he had naturally a good diſpoſition. This was, that Robinſon declared he was chiefly induced to the diſcovery by what had happened at the pawnbroker's, and by the miſeries which he there perceived he had been inſtrumental in bringing on Booth and his family.

The next day Booth and his wife, at the doctor's inſtance, dined with Colonel James and his lady, where they were received with great civility, and all matters were accommodated, without Booth ever knowing a ſyllable of the challenge, even to this day.

The doctor inſiſted very ſtrongly on having Miſs Harris taken into cuſtody; and ſaid, if ſhe was his ſiſter, he would deliver her to juſtice. He added beſides, that it was impoſſible to ſcreen her, and carry on the proſecution, or, indeed, recover the eſtate. Amelia at laſt begged the delay of one day only, in which time ſhe wrote a letter to her ſiſter, informing her of the diſcovery, and the danger in which ſhe ſtood, and begged her earneſtly to make her eſcape, with many aſſurances that ſhe would never ſuffer her to know any diſtreſs. This letter ſhe ſent away expreſs, and it had the deſired effect: for Miſs Harris, having received ſufficient

information

information from the attorney to the ſame purpoſe, immediately ſet out for Pool, and from thence to France, carrying with her all her money, moſt of her clothes, and ſome few jewels. She had, indeed, packed up plate and jewels to the value of two thouſand pounds and upwards. But Booth, to whom Amelia communicated the letter, prevented her, by ordering the man that went with the expreſs (who had been a ſerjeant of the foot-guards, recommended to him by Atkinſon) to ſuffer the lady to go whither ſhe pleaſed, but not to take any thing with her except her clothes, which he was carefully to ſearch. Theſe orders were obeyed punctually, and with theſe ſhe was obliged to comply.

Two days after the bird was flown, a warrant from the lord chief juſtice arrived to take her up, the meſſenger of which returned with the news of her flight, highly to the ſatisfaction of Amelia, and conſequently of Booth; and indeed not greatly to the grief of the doctor.

About a week afterwards, Booth and Amelia, with their children, and Captain Atkinſon and his lady, all ſet forwards together for Amelia's houſe, where they arrived amidſt the acclamations of all the neighbours, and every public demonſtration of joy.

They found the houſe ready prepared to receive them by Atkinſon's friend, the old ſerjeant, and a good dinner prepared for them by Amelia's old nurſe, who was addreſſed with the utmoſt duty by her ſon and daughter, moſt affectionately careſſed by Booth and his wife, and by Amelia's abſolute command, ſeated next to herſelf at the table; at which, perhaps were aſſembled ſome of the beſt and happieſt people then in the world.

## CHAP. IX.

### *In which the Hiſtory is concluded.*

HAVING brought our hiſtory to a concluſion, as to thoſe points in which we preſume our reader was chiefly intereſted, in the foregoing chapter; we ſhall

in

in this, by way of epilogue, endeavour to ſatisfy his curioſity, as to what hath ſince happened to the principal perſonages of whom we have treated in the foregoing pages.

Colonel James and his lady, after living in a polite manner for many years together, at laſt agreed to live in as polite a manner aſunder. The colonel hath kept Miſs Matthews ever ſince, and is at length grown to doat on her (though now very diſagreeable in her perſon, and immenſely fat) to ſuch a degree, that he ſubmits to be treated by her in the moſt tyrannical manner.

He allows his lady eight hundred pounds a year, with which ſhe divides her time between Tunbridge, Bath, and London, and paſſes about nine hours in the twenty four at cards. Her income is lately increaſed by three thouſand pounds, left her by her brother, Colonel Bath, who was killed in a duel about ſix years ago, by a gentleman who told the colonel he differed from him in opinion.

The noble peer and Mrs. Elliſon have been both dead ſeveral years, and both of the conſequences of their favorite vices; Mrs. Elliſon having fallen a martyr to her liquor, and the other to his amours; by which he was at laſt become ſo rotten, that he ſtunk above ground.

The attorney, Murphy, was brought to his trial at the Old Bailey; where after much quibbling about the meaning of a very plain act of parliament, he was at length convicted of forgery, and was ſoon afterwards hanged at Tyburn.

The witneſs for ſome time ſeemed to reform his life, and received a ſmall penſion from Booth: after which he returned to vicious courſes, took a purſe on the highway, was detected and taken, and followed the laſt ſteps of his old maſter. So apt are men, whoſe manners have been once thoroughly corrupted, to return from any dawn of amendment, into the dark paths of vice.

As

As to Mis Harris, ſhe lived three years with a broken heart at Boulogne, where ſhe received annually fifty pounds from her ſiſter, who was hardly prevailed on by Dr. Harriſon not to ſend her a hundred, and then died in a moſt miſerable manner.

Mr. Atkinſon, upon the whole, hath led a very happy life with his wife, though he hath been ſometimes obliged to pay proper homage to her ſuperior underſtanding and knowledge. This, however, is chearfully ſubmitted to, and ſhe makes him proper returns of fondneſs. They have two fine boys, of whom they are equally fond. He is lately advanced to the rank of captain; and laſt ſummer both he and his wife paid a viſit of three months to Booth and his wife.

Dr. Harriſon is grown old in years and in honour; beloved and reſpected by all his pariſhioners, and by all his neighbours. He divides his time between his pariſh, his old town, and Booth's; at which laſt place he had, two years ago, a gentle fit of the gout, being the firſt attack of that diſtemper. During this fit, Amelia was his nurſe, and her two elder daughters ſat up alternately with him for a whole week. The eldeſt of thoſe girls, whoſe name is Amelia, is his favourite; ſhe is the picture of her mother, and it is thought the doctor hath diſtinguiſhed her in his will; for he hath declared that he will leave his whole fortune, except ſome few charities, among Amelia's children.

As to Booth and Amelia, Fortune ſeems to have made them large amends for the tricks ſhe played them in their youth. They have, ever ſince the above period of this hiſtory enjoyed an uninterrupted courſe of health and happineſs. In about ſix weeks after Booth's firſt coming into the country, he went to London, and paid all his debts of honour; after which, and a ſtay of two days only, he returned into the country, and hath never ſince been thirty miles from home. He hath two boys and four girls; the eldeſt of the boys, he who hath made his appearance in this hiſtory, is juſt come

from

from the univerſity, and is one of the fineſt gentlemen and beſt ſcholars of his age. The ſecond is juſt going from ſchool, and is intended for the church, that being his own choice. His eldeſt daughter is a woman grown, but we muſt not mention her age. A marriage was propoſed to her the other day, with a young fellow of a good eſtate, but ſhe never would ſee him more than once: 'For Doctor Harriſon,' ſays ſhe, 'told me he 'was illiterate; and I am ſure he is ill-natured.' The ſecond girl is three years younger than her ſiſter; and the others are yet children.

Amelia is ſtill the fineſt woman in England of her age. Booth himſelf often avers ſhe is as handſome as ever. Nothing can equal the ſerenity of their lives. Amelia declared to me the other day, that ſhe did not remember to have ſeen her huſband out of humour theſe ten years; and, upon my inſinuating to her, that he had the beſt of wives, ſhe anſwered, with a ſmile, that ſhe ought to be ſo, for that he had made her the happieſt of women.

END OF AMELIA.